# Left Inversion, System Zeros, and Input Estimation 

by<br>Sneha Sanjeevini

A dissertation submitted in partial fulfillment of the requirements for the degree of

Doctor of Philosophy
(Aerospace Engineering)
in the University of Michigan
2022

Doctoral Committee:
Professor Dennis S. Bernstein, Chair
Assistant Professor Alex Gorodetsky
Professor Ilya V. Kolmanovsky
Associate Professor Necmiye Ozay

## Sneha Sanjeevini

snehasnj@umich.edu
ORCID iD: 0000-0002-6501-9752
© Sneha Sanjeevini 2022

To Amma and Pappa for their love and support

## ACKNOWLEDGMENTS

I would like to thank my advisor, Professor Dennis S. Bernstein, for his invaluable guidance and support for the past few years. His teachings have brought about a significant growth in my knowledge. Apart from his excellent advising and teaching abilities, his unwavering patience, kindness, and encouragement has helped me to cruise through the most difficult times and achieve success. Next, I would like to thank my parents and brother for their unconditional love, patience, and support. This dissertation would not have been possible without my parents' sacrifices for the betterment of me.

## TABLE OF CONTENTS

DEDICATION ..... ii
ACKNOWLEDGMENTS ..... iii
LIST OF FIGURES ..... vi
ABSTRACT ..... viii
CHAPTER
1 Introduction ..... 1
1.1 System Inversion and Input Estimation ..... 1
1.2 Role of Zeros in Input Estimation ..... 2
1.3 Literature Review on Input Estimation ..... 3
1.4 Applications of Input Estimation ..... 4
1.5 Adaptive Input Estimation ..... 4
1.6 Contributions ..... 5
1.7 Dissertation Outline ..... 8
2 Preliminaries ..... 11
2.1 Notations ..... 11
2.2 Definitions ..... 12
3 Finite-Time Input Estimation ..... 18
3.1 Effect of Zeros on Input Estimation ..... 19
3.2 Smith-McMillan Construction of a Delayed Left Inverse ..... 21
3.3 Construction of an FIR Delayed Left Inverse with the Minimal Delay ..... 23
3.4 Input Estimation using FIR Delayed Left Inverse ..... 29
3.5 Existence of FIR Delayed Left Inverse ..... 31
3.6 Numerical Examples ..... 34
3.7 An Application of Finite-Time Input Estimation ..... 37
4 Transmission Zeros and Infinite Zeros ..... 41
4.1 Counting Transmission Zeros ..... 42
4.2 Counting Infinite Zeros ..... 45
4.3 Numerical Example ..... 47
5 Zero Dynamics of Input-Output Models ..... 50
5.1 Preliminary Results ..... 50
5.2 Results on Zero Dynamics of Input-Output Models ..... 52
5.3 Equivalence of Output Zeroing in Input-Output Models and State Space Models ..... 55
6 Retrospective Cost Input Estimation ..... 73
6.1 Input Estimation ..... 74
6.2 State Estimation ..... 77
6.3 Error Systems ..... 78
6.4 Kalman Gain ..... 79
6.5 The Filter $G_{f, k}$ ..... 81
7 Conversion Between LTV State Space Models and LTV Input-Output Models ..... 83
8 Decomposition of Retrospective Performance Variable in RCIE ..... 88
9 Causal Numerical Differentiation ..... 97
9.1 Differentiation using RCIE ..... 97
9.2 Differentiation using HGO ..... 99
9.3 Differentiation using BDD ..... 100
9.4 Numerical Examples ..... 101
9.5 Differentiation of Experimental Data ..... 104
10 Decomposition of Retrospective Performance Variable in RCAC ..... 109
10.1 Retrospective Cost Adaptive Control ..... 109
10.2 Decomposition of the Retrospective Performance Variable ..... 113
11 Conclusions and Future Work ..... 118
11.1 Conclusions ..... 118
11.2 Future Work ..... 119
BIBLIOGRAPHY ..... 121

## LIST OF FIGURES

## FIGURE

1.1 Cascade of a right invertible system and a delayed right inverse $H$. ..... 2
1.2 Cascade of a left invertible system and a delayed left inverse $H$. Although $z=H y=H G u=u$, it does not necessarily follow that the output $z$ matches a delayed version of $u$ due to initial conditions and zeros. ..... 2
3.1 (a) shows the input and output of (3.6), (3.7) with zero initial conditions. (b) shows the input and output of (3.6), (3.7) with nonzero initial conditions. ..... 35
3.2 (a) shows the input and output of (3.6), (3.7) with zero initial conditions. (b) shows the input and output of (3.6), (3.7) with nonzero initial conditions. ..... 36
3.3 Input and output of (3.6), (3.7), where $u=\left[\begin{array}{ll}u_{1} & u_{2}\end{array}\right]^{\mathrm{T}}$ and $z=\left[z_{1} z_{2}\right]^{\mathrm{T}}$. Note that, for all $k \geq 4, z_{1, k}=u_{1, k}$, and, for all $k \geq 1, z_{2, k}=u_{2, k}$. Hence, for all $k \geq 4, z_{k}=u_{k}$ ..... 37
3.4 Mass-spring system ..... 38
3.5 Input estimation for the mass-spring system shown in Figure 3.4. $u$ is the actual input and $z$ is the estimated input. ..... 39
3.6 Zoomed view of Figure 3.5 ..... 408.1 (a) For all $k \geq 21, z_{\mathrm{rc}, k} \approx 0$, which confirms (8.28). (b) For all $k \geq 21, z_{\mathrm{pp}, k} \approx z_{\mathrm{mm}, k}$,which confirms (8.29). Furthermore, for all $k \geq 35, z_{\mathrm{pp}, k} \approx z_{\mathrm{mm}, k} \approx 0$. (c) For all$k \geq 0,\left|z_{\mathrm{rc}, k}-\left(z_{\mathrm{pp}, k}+z_{\mathrm{mm}, k}\right)\right| \leq 3 \times 10^{-14}$, which confirms (8.10). . . . . . . . . . 95
8.2 (a) After the initial transient period of about 25 steps, $\hat{d}$ follows $d$. (b) The estimator coefficients $\theta$ converges after about 25 steps. (c) The virtual external input perturbation $\widetilde{d}$ converges to zero after about 25 steps, in accordance with Proposition 8.2.95
8.3 The magnitudes of $G_{z w, 200}$ and $G_{z v, 200}$ are close to zero at all frequencies. The magnitude of $G_{z d, 200}$ at the frequencies 0 and $0.3 \mathrm{rad} /$ step contained in the spectrum of the unknown input signal $d$ is close to zero. These observations confirm that, for large values of $k, z_{\mathrm{pp}, k} \approx 0$.96
8.4 Comparison of the frequency response of $G_{z \widetilde{d}, 200}$ with that of $G_{\mathrm{f}, 200}$. The magnitude plots and the phase plots match approximately. ..... 96
9.1 Example 9.1 Single Differentiation. (a) The signals estimated by SD/RCIE and SD/HGO follow the true first derivative $y^{(1)}$ after about 20 steps, whereas the signal estimated by SD/BDD follows $y^{(1)}$ without a transient period. (b) A zoomed view of plot (a). At steady state, SD/HGO is more accurate than SD/RCIE and SD/BDD.102
9.2 Example 9.1 Double Differentiation. (a) The signal estimated by DD/HGO follows the true second derivative $y^{(2)}$ after about 20 steps, the signal estimated by DD/RCIE follows $y^{(2)}$ after about 50 steps, and the signal estimated by DD/BDD follows $y^{(2)}$ without a transient period. The signal estimated by DD/HGO has large oscillations in the transient period. (b) A zoomed view of plot (a). At steady state, DD/HGO is more accurate than DD/RCIE and DD/BDD.103
9.3 Example 9.2 Single Differentiation. (a) The signals estimated by SD/RCIE, SD/HGO, and SD/BDD follow the true first derivative $y^{(1)}$ after an initial transient period. SD/HGO exhibits a longer transient period as compared to SD/RCIE. (b) A zoomed view of plot (a). At steady state, SD/HGO is more accurate than SD/RCIE and SD/BDD. 104
9.4 Example 9.2 Double Differentiation. (a) The signal estimated by DD/RCIE follows the true second derivative $y^{(2)}$ after an initial transient period. Though the signals estimated by DD/HGO and DD/BDD follow the general trend of $y^{(2)}$, they are noisy. (b) A zoomed view of plot (a). At steady state, DD/RCIE is more accurate than DD/HGO and DD/BDD. ..... 105
9.5 Example 9.2. Normalized RMSE in the estimation of the first derivative. SD/HGO performs better than SD/RCIE and SD/BDD. ..... 105
9.6 Example 9.2. Normalized RMSE in the estimation of the second derivative. DD/RCIE performs better than DD/HGO and DD/BDD. ..... 106
9.7 Experimental Data. (a) The trajectory of the rover on the $x-y$ plane. (b) Position of the rover along $x$-axis versus time. ..... 106
9.8 Single Differentiation of Experimental Data. (a) shows the signals estimated by SD/RCIE, SD/HGO, and SD/BDD. (b) A zoomed view of plot (a). The signal esti- mated by SD/BDD is noisy, whereas the signals estimated by SD/RCIE and SD/HGO are reasonably smooth. ..... 107
9.9 Double Differentiation of Experimental Data. (a) shows the signals estimated by DD/RCIE, DD/HGO, and DD/BDD. (b) A zoomed view of plot (a). The signal esti- mated by DD/BDD is noisy, whereas the signals estimated by DD/RCIE and DD/HGO are reasonably smooth. ..... 108


#### Abstract

This dissertation focuses on input estimation, that is, estimation of the input to a linear system using knowledge of the output measurements and the system model for tall or square systems with full column rank. First, finite-time input estimation for discrete-time linear time-invariant (LTI) systems with zero nonzero zeros and unknown initial conditions is considered. Necessary and sufficient conditions for finite-time input estimation are derived. For systems with zero nonzero zeros, a specific construction of finite-impulse-response (FIR) delayed left inverse with minimal delay using the Smith-McMillan form at infinity is given.

Since zeros play a vital role in input estimation, further research on system zeros is considered. Expressions for the number of transmission zeros and the number of infinite zeros in terms of the defect of a block-Toeplitz matrix of Markov parameters and the observability matrix are obtained. For counting zeros, these results serve as duals to the counting of poles using the block-Hankel matrix. Furthermore, the zero dynamics of input-output models are explored, and their properties are elucidated. Output zeroing in input-output models is considered and its equivalence to output zeroing in state space models is discussed.

Next, retrospective cost input estimation (RCIE), which is an adaptive input estimation technique for discrete-time linear time-varying (LTV) systems that depends on a target model based on the closed-loop dynamics, is considered. In particular, the decomposition of the retrospective performance variable into the sum of a performance term and a model-matching term, which provides insight into the achievable performance of RCIE, is presented. Since the system dynamics and target model are LTV, the construction of LTV state space realizations for LTV input-output models as well as the construction of LTV input-output models for LTV state space models are given in this dissertation. Using the same technique used for RCIE, the decomposition of the retrospective performance variable in retrospective cost adaptive control (RCAC) is also derived.

Finally, as an application of input estimation, causal numerical differentiation is considered. When the dynamics of the system consist of a cascade of one or more integrators, the estimates of the input provide estimates of one or more derivatives of the output signal. The performance of RCIE as a causal differentiator is analyzed through numerical simulations. RCIE as a causal differentiator is then applied to the position data of a small rover to estimate its velocity and acceleration.


## CHAPTER 1

## Introduction

### 1.1 System Inversion and Input Estimation

Left inverses and right inverses of functions and systems play an important role in many fields of engineering. The need to invert dynamical systems arises in many control-system related applications such as feedforward control, output tracking, and input estimation.

This dissertation focuses on input estimation using left inversion; however, the role of right inverses is briefly reviewed in order to clarify the distinction. The theory of right inverses for continuous-time systems was studied in [1-5] and the theory of right inverses for discrete-time systems were studied in [5-8]. Right inverses are used for feedforward control and output tracking. For illustration, consider the command $y_{\mathrm{d}}$ shown in Figure 1.1, and suppose that the input $u$ to the transfer function $G$ is given by the output of the delayed right inverse $H$ of $G$. Letting $y_{\mathrm{d}}$ be the input to $H$, it follows that $y=G u=G H y_{\mathrm{d}}=y_{\mathrm{d}}$, which implies that the output $y$ follows the command $y_{\mathrm{d}}$. However, this calculation ignores the effect of pole-zero cancellation and initial conditions. The construction of right inverses is challenging in the case where $G$ has a nonminimum-phase transmission zero, which may entail a hidden instability. For this case, approximate right inverses have been developed for feedforward control and output tracking [924].

Unlike right inverses, left inverses estimate unknown inputs. For example, let $u$ be an unknown input, as shown in Figure 1.2, and suppose that the output $y$ of the plant $G$ is the input to the delayed left inverse $H$. In the case where the initial conditions of $G$ and $H$ are zero and $G$ has


Figure 1.1: Cascade of a right invertible system and a delayed right inverse $H$.
no zeros, it follows that the output of $H$ is $z=H y=H G u=u$. The theory of left inverses for linear systems was developed in [25-27]. Necessary and sufficient conditions for the existence of delayed left inverses in terms of the ranks of successive block-Toeplitz matrices were given in [25]. An algorithm for constructing the inverse of an invertible square system was given in [27]. Delayed left inverses were constructed in [26] for both continuous-time and discrete-time linear systems. Additional work on the theory of left inverses includes [2-4, 6-8, 28-31].


Figure 1.2: Cascade of a left invertible system and a delayed left inverse $H$. Although $z=H y=H G u=u$, it does not necessarily follow that the output $z$ matches a delayed version of $u$ due to initial conditions and zeros.

### 1.2 Role of Zeros in Input Estimation

The zeros of a dynamical system present an impediment to input estimation. If a system has a transmission zero, then there exist an initial condition and nonzero input such that the response of the system is identically zero. For example, consider the discrete-time transfer function $G(\mathrm{z})=$ $\frac{\mathrm{z}+1}{\mathrm{z}+2}$, whose inverse is $H(\mathrm{z})=\frac{\mathrm{z}+2}{\mathrm{z}+1}$. Now consider the minimal realization of $G$ given by

$$
\begin{array}{r}
x_{k+1}=-2 x_{k}+u_{k}, \\
y_{k}=-x_{k}+u_{k} . \tag{1.2}
\end{array}
$$

Letting $x_{0}=1$ and $u_{k}=(-1)^{k}$, it follows that $y \equiv 0$. On the other hand, letting $x_{0}=0$ and $u \equiv 0$, it also follows that $y \equiv 0$. Hence, it is impossible to estimate the input from the output. Although $G$ is invertible, the zero at -1 prevents unambiguous estimation of the input. Therefore,
the study of system zeros is extremely important within the context of input estimation.

### 1.3 Literature Review on Input Estimation

Within a deterministic, discrete-time setting, finite-time input estimation provides the exact values of the input. For finite-time input estimation, there are three key issues. The first issue concerns the delay under which the input can be estimated. The minimal delay was determined in [25], which showed that the minimal delay is the smallest index for which the difference of the ranks of two successive block-Toeplitz matrices is equal to the number of inputs. The second issue concerns the presence of zeros. Since zeros block inputs, the presence of zeros prevents unambiguous estimation of the system input. The third issue concerns the effect of unknown, nonzero initial conditions. In particular, the free response of the system contributes to its output, thus making it difficult to determine the input by inverting the system.

Results on finite-time input estimation, that is, exact input estimation after a finite number of steps were given in [32-36]. In particular, for systems with no zeros, a state-estimation and inputestimation algorithm was given in [36] and an alternative input-estimation algorithm based on the generalized inverse of a partitioned matrix was given in [34].

If a system has at least one zero that is not zero, then finite-time input estimation cannot be achieved for any delay. However, in this case, input estimation is possible asymptotically; a more appropriate name for this problem is asymptotic input estimation. Input estimation was considered for systems with no zeros in [37,38], for minimum-phase systems in [39] and for nonminimum phase systems in [11, 40-48].

Input estimation is distinct from the design of unknown input observers [49-58]. In particular, unknown input observers are constructed to estimate states despite the presence of an unknown input that is not captured by zero-mean white noise as in the case of the Kalman filter. Unknown input observers are thus state estimators that are robust to the presence of non-stochastic unknown inputs. It is important to emphasize, however, that, unlike input estimation, unknown input ob-
servers do not estimate unknown inputs.

### 1.4 Applications of Input Estimation

One of the main applications of input estimation is target tracking [59-62]. Target tracking is the determination of the present and often future position and velocity of a moving target from noisy measurements of its present states. In order to perform target tracking, the acceleration of the target is treated as an input and then estimated using input estimation techniques. The estimated acceleration is then used in conjunction with Kalman filter to estimate the states.

Input estimation is also used in fault detection and diagnosis [63-65]. In sensor fault detection and diagnosis, a causal, delayed left inverse of a dynamical system that represents the relationship between two sets of sensors, namely, input sensors, which are suspect, and output sensors, which are assumed to be healthy, is constructed. Measurements from the healthy sensors are used to drive the delayed left inverse, whose output provides estimates of the expected measurements from the suspect input sensors. By comparing the estimates of the measurements of the suspect sensors with the actual measurements, it is possible to detect and diagnose faults in these sensors.

Additional applications of input estimation include determination of features of disturbances [40, 66], and automotive control [67-69].

Another application of input estimation is causal numerical differentiation, which has not been considered previously in the literature and is part of the work in this dissertation. When the dynamics of the system consist of a cascade of one or more integrators, the estimates of the input provide estimates of one or more derivatives of the output signal. Since, like state estimation, input estimation is an online technique, this approach is suitable for causal numerical differentiation.

### 1.5 Adaptive Input Estimation

Adaptive input estimation is considered in [70], where the goal is to estimate the velocity and acceleration of a maneuvering vehicle. In this technique known as retrospective cost input estima-
tion (RCIE), input estimation is combined with state estimation based on the discrete-time Kalman filter. Additional prior work on RCIE includes [64,71-75].

RCIE is applicable to discrete-time linear time-varying (LTV) multi-input, multi-output (MIMO) systems. In RCIE, the error metric for adaptation is given by the estimation residual, that is, the innovations. A retrospective performance variable based on the innovations is defined. The retrospective performance variable depends on a target model that is based on the closed-loop system dynamics. A cost function involving the retrospective performance variable is minimized using retrospective cost optimization [76] to update the coefficients of the input estimator. Retrospective cost optimization is based on recursive least squares (RLS). RCIE then replicates the estimated input in the Kalman filter to estimate the states.

### 1.6 Contributions

This section summarizes the contributions of the work presented in this dissertation relative to the prior literature.

## Finite-Time Input Estimation

Finite-time input estimation for discrete-time LTI systems is considered in [32-36], where the input is reconstructed based on a state space approach for systems with no zeros. These works do not give an explicit construction of left inverses.

The work in this dissertation has three key contributions relative to prior work. First, a specific construction of a finite-impulse-response (FIR) delayed left inverse with minimal delay for systems with zero nonzero zeros is presented. Next, it is shown that, in the presence of an arbitrary unknown initial condition, finite-time input estimation is possible using a delayed left inverse $H$ if and only if $H$ is FIR. Finally, it is shown that a transfer function with full column normal rank has an FIR delayed left inverse with the minimal delay if and only if the system has zero nonzero zeros. The presented works on finite-time input estimation were published in [77,78].

## System Zeros

The number of poles of a transfer function can be obtained from knowledge of the Markov parameters since the rank of a block Hankel matrix of Markov parameters is equal to the McMillan degree [79]. This is useful for estimating the number of poles in the case where the system model is unknown. The number of transmission zeros of a transfer function can be counted by forming the Smith-McMillan form, and the number of infinite zeros of a transfer function can be counted by forming the Smith-McMillan form at infinity [80]. Another approach is to compute the number of transmission and infinite zeros by using pole and zero modules [81]. However, the above approaches for counting zeros are not feasible if the system model is unknown.

Within the context of discrete-time LTI systems, the present dissertation describes alternative characterizations of the number of transmission zeros and the number of infinite zeros. In particular, the number of zeros is related to the defect of a block-Toeplitz matrix of Markov parameters. For counting zeros, these results serve as duals to the counting of poles using the block-Hankel matrix and provide a method to estimate the number of zeros from the Markov parameters when the system model is unknown.

Next, this dissertation presents several novel results on the zero dynamics of input-output models. The main motivation for this work is the fact that RCIE uses input-output models whose zeros directly impact the ability to perform input estimation. Zeros of state space models have been extensively studied over the years [82-87]. However, zeros of input-output models have not been studied in the literature.

The presented works on system zeros were published in $[88,89]$.

## Decomposition of the Retrospective Performance Variable

The purpose of the decomposition of retrospective performance variable is to investigate the underlying mechanism and performance of RCIE. In this direction, this paper provides a detailed analysis of the decomposition of the retrospective performance variable, which provides insight into the achievable performance of RCIE. In particular, the retrospective performance variable is
decomposed into the sum of a performance term and a model-matching term. The performance term consists of a closed-loop time-domain transfer function, whereas the model-matching term involves a closed-loop time-domain transfer function and the target model, both driven by the virtual external input perturbation. This work is motivated by the decomposition of the retrospective performance variable given in [90] within the context of retrospective cost adaptive control (RCAC) [76, 91-93]. However, unlike [90], the system dynamics and target model in the present paper are linear time-varying (LTV), and hence the approach given in [90] is not applicable here.

The main contribution of the present work is thus the development of an alternative approach to the decomposition of the retrospective performance variable that is applicable to LTV models. This approach depends on the construction of discrete-time LTV state space realizations for LTV input-output models as well as the construction of LTV input-output models for LTV state space models. The existing results on LTV input-output models in [94-99] are presented in terms of abstract input-output maps and infinite power series, are not directly implementable and thus not applicable to the problems considered here. Consequently, the present paper gives simple and easily implementable algebraic results on LTV input-output dynamics needed to derive the decomposition of the retrospective performance variable in RCIE.

The presented works on the decomposition of retrospective performance variable in RCIE were published in [100].

This dissertation also presents the decomposition of the retrospective performance variable in RCAC for the case where the system dynamics and target model are LTV. The same approach that was used for the decomposition of retrospective performance variable in RCIE is used in RCAC.

## Causal Numerical Differentiation

Many applications of estimation and control benefit from the ability to perform causal differentiation, that is, numerical differentiation that provides estimates of the derivative of a signal based on current and past data [101-105]. Numerous techniques have been developed for numerical differentiation, including integration-based methods [106, 107], observer-based methods [108, 109],
and sliding-mode techniques [110-113]. However, many of these works are either noncausal implementations or they are difficult to tune in practice.

The work presented in this dissertation formulates causal numerical differentiation as an input estimation problem. The accuracy of retrospective cost input estimation (RCIE) and the high-gain observer (HGO) given in [108] for causal numerical differentiation in the presence of noisy measurements are compared through numerical simulations. For simplicity and clarity, the numerical study in this dissertation considers harmonic signals corrupted by Gaussian white noise. For each input signal, backward-difference numerical differentiation provides a baseline for performance comparison. The different methods are then applied to the position data of a small rover to estimate its velocity and acceleration.

The work on causal numerical differentiation was done in collaboration with Shashank Verma and was published in [114].

### 1.7 Dissertation Outline

This dissertation is organized as follows.

## Chapter 2 Summary

Chapter 2 lists all the notations and definitions used in this dissertation.

## Chapter 3 Summary

Chapter 3 presents results on finite-time input estimation for discrete-time linear time-invariant systems using FIR inverses. Numerical examples are provided for illustrating the results.

## Chapter 4 Summary

Chapter 4 gives expressions for the number of transmission zeros and he number of infinite zeros of a MIMO transfer function in terms of the defect of an augmented matrix involving an
observability matrix and a block-Toeplitz matrix. These results are illustrated with a numerical example.

## Chapter 5 Summary

Chapter 5 elucidates the properties of the zero dynamics within the context of input-output models. In addition, output zeroing in input-output models is considered, and its equivalence to output zeroing in state space models is discussed. Finally, a numerical example is presented to illustrate the results.

## Chapter 6 Summary

Chapter 6 gives a concise description of the RCIE algorithm.

## Chapter 7 Summary

Chapter 7 gives the construction of LTV state space realizations for LTV input-output models as well as the construction of LTV input-output models for LTV state space models.

## Chapter 8 Summary

Chapter 8 presents the decomposition of the retrospective performance variable in RCIE into the sum of a performance term and a model-matching term. A numerical example is used to illustrate the derived results and observations.

## Chapter 9 Summary

Chapter 9 presents and compares causal numerical differentiation using RCIE and HGO. The velocity and acceleration of a small rover are estimated by numerical differentiation of experimental position data of the rover.

## Chapter 10 Summary

Chapter 10 gives a concise description of the RCAC algorithm and presents the decomposition of the retrospective performance variable in RCAC into the sum of a performance term and a model-matching term.

Finally, chapter 11 gives the conclusions and future work.

## CHAPTER 2

## Preliminaries

This chapter lists all the notations and definitions used in this dissertation.

### 2.1 Notations

| $\mathbb{R}[\mathrm{z}]^{p \times m}$ | the set of $p \times m$ matrices each of whose entries is a polynomial |
| :---: | :---: |
|  | with real coefficients |
| $\mathbb{R}(\mathrm{z})^{p \times m}$ | the set of $p \times m$ matrices each of whose entries is a rational |
|  | function with real coefficients |
| $\mathbb{R}(\mathrm{z})_{\text {prop }}^{p \times m}$ | the proper transfer functions in $\mathbb{R}(\mathrm{z})^{p \times m}$ |
| $\stackrel{\min }{\sim}$ | a minimal realization of a transfer function |
| $\operatorname{dim} V$ | the dimension of a vector space $V$ |
| $\mathcal{R}(A)$ | the range of $A$ |
| def $A$ | the defect of $A$ |
| ind $A$ | the index of $A$ |
| $0^{0}$ | 1 |
| $\mathrm{McDeg} G$ | the McMillan degree of $G$ |
| q | the forward shift operator |
| $\mathrm{q}^{-1}$ | the backward shift operator |

### 2.2 Definitions

Definition 2.1. Let $G \in \mathbb{R}(\mathrm{z})_{\text {prop }}^{p \times m}$, and, for each $i \geq 0$, let $H_{i}$ be the $i$ th Markov parameter of $G$. Then, for all $i \geq 0$, the $i$ th Markov block-Toeplitz matrix associated with $G$ is defined by

$$
\mathcal{T}_{i} \triangleq\left[\begin{array}{ccccc}
H_{0} & 0 & 0 & \cdots & 0  \tag{2.1}\\
H_{1} & H_{0} & 0 & \cdots & 0 \\
H_{2} & H_{1} & H_{0} & \cdots & 0 \\
\vdots & \vdots & \ddots & \ddots & \vdots \\
H_{i} & H_{i-1} & \cdots & H_{1} & H_{0}
\end{array}\right] \in \mathbb{R}^{(i+1) p \times(i+1) m}
$$

In the case where $i$ is a negative integer, $\mathcal{T}_{i}$ is an empty matrix.
Definition 2.2. Let $G \in \mathbb{R}(\mathrm{z})_{\text {prop }}^{m \times p}$, and let $d$ be a nonnegative integer. Then, $G$ is delayed left invertible with delay $d$ if there exists $H \in \mathbb{R}(\mathrm{z})_{\text {prop }}^{m \times p}$ such that $H(\mathrm{z}) G(\mathrm{z})=\mathrm{z}^{-d} I_{m}$. In this case, $H$ is a delayed left inverse of $G$ with delay $d$. Furthermore, $G$ is delayed left invertible if there exists $d \geq 0$ such that $G$ is delayed left invertible with delay $d$, and $H$ is a delayed left inverse of $G$ if there exists $d \geq 0$ such that $H$ is a delayed left inverse of $G$ with delay $d$. Finally, $H$ is a left inverse of $G$ if $H$ is a delayed left inverse of $G$ with delay $d=0$.

Definition 2.3. Let $A \in \mathbb{R}^{n \times n}$. Then, the index of $A$, denoted by ind $A$, is the smallest nonnegative integer $\nu$ such that rank $A^{\nu}=\operatorname{rank} A^{\nu+1}$.

Note that, if $A$ is nilpotent, then ind $A$ is the smallest positive integer $\nu$ such that $A^{\nu}=0$.
Definition 2.4. Let $G \in \mathbb{R}(\mathrm{z})_{\text {prop }}^{p \times m}$, where $G \stackrel{\min }{\sim}\left[\begin{array}{l|l}A & B \\ \hline C & D\end{array}\right]$ and $A \in \mathbb{R}^{n \times n . ~ T h e n, ~ t h e ~ i n d e x ~ o f ~} G$, denoted by ind $G$, is ind $A$.

Definition 2.5. Let $U \in \mathbb{R}[\mathrm{z}]^{n \times n}$. Then $U$ is unimodular if $\operatorname{det} U$ is a nonzero constant.
Definition 2.6. Let $W \in \mathbb{R}(\mathrm{z})_{\text {prop }}^{m \times m}$. Then $W$ is biproper if $W_{\infty} \triangleq \lim _{\mathrm{z} \rightarrow \infty} W(\mathrm{z})$ is nonsingular.
Definition 2.7. Let $G \in \mathbb{R}(\mathrm{z})_{\text {prop }}^{p \times m}$ and $i \geq 0$. Then $\beta_{i}(G) \triangleq \operatorname{rank} \mathcal{T}_{i}-\operatorname{rank} \mathcal{T}_{i-1}$, where $\mathcal{T}_{i}$ is $i$ th Markov block-Toeplitz matrix associated with $G$.

Definition 2.8. Let $G \in \mathbb{R}(\mathrm{z})_{\text {prop }}^{p \times m}$. The $\operatorname{rank}$ of $G$ is the maximum value of $\operatorname{rank} G(\mathrm{z})$ taken over the set of complex numbers z such that, for all $i=1, \ldots, p$ and $j=1, \ldots, m, \mathrm{z}$ is not a pole of the $(i, j)$ entry of $G$.

Definition 2.9. Let $G \in \mathbb{R}\left(z_{\text {prop }}^{p \times m}\right.$, and assume that $G$ has full column normal rank. Then $\eta_{G}$ denotes the smallest nonnegative integer $d$ for which there exists a delayed left inverse of $G$ with delay $d$.

Definition 2.10. Let $G \in \mathbb{R}(\mathrm{z})_{\text {prop }}^{p \times m}$. Then the roots of the polynomial $p_{1} p_{2} \ldots p_{\rho}$ are the transmission zeros of $G$, where the polynomials $p_{1}, p_{2}, \ldots, p_{\rho}$ are the numerators of the nonzero diagonal entries of the Smith-McMillan form given by Theorem 3.2.

Definition 2.11. Let $A \in \mathbb{R}^{m \times n}$. Then, the defect of $A$, denoted by def $A$, is the rank of the nullspace of $A$.

Definition 2.12. Let $V \subseteq \mathbb{R}^{n}$ and let

$$
\left[\begin{array}{l}
A  \tag{2.2}\\
C
\end{array}\right] V \subseteq\left[\begin{array}{l}
I \\
0
\end{array}\right] V+\mathcal{R}\left(\left[\begin{array}{l}
B \\
D
\end{array}\right]\right)
$$

Then $V$ is an output-nulling invariant subspace of $(A, B, C, D)$. The sum of all outputnulling invariant subspaces of $(A, B, C, D)$ is the maximal output-nulling invariant subspace of $(A, B, C, D)$.

Definition 2.13. Let $G \in \mathbb{R}(\mathrm{z})_{\mathrm{prop}}^{p \times m}$, where $G \sim\left[\begin{array}{c|c}A & B \\ \hline C & D\end{array}\right]$ and $A \in \mathbb{R}^{n \times n}$. Then, the Rosenbrock system matrix is defined as

$$
z(\mathrm{z}) \triangleq\left[\begin{array}{cc}
\mathrm{z} I-A & -B  \tag{2.3}\\
C & D
\end{array}\right]
$$

Furthermore, $\mathrm{z} \in \mathbb{C}$ is an invariant zero of the realization $\left[\begin{array}{l|l}A & B \\ \hline C & D\end{array}\right]$ if $\operatorname{rank} Z(\mathrm{z})<\operatorname{rank} Z$.

Definition 2.14. Let $P \in \mathbb{R}[\mathrm{z}]^{p \times m}$ and $R \in \mathbb{R}[\mathrm{z}]^{p \times p}$. Then $R$ left divides $P$ if there exists $\hat{P} \in$ $\mathbb{R}[\mathrm{z}]^{p \times m}$ such that $P=R \hat{P}$.

Definition 2.15. Let $P \in \mathbb{R}[z]^{p \times n}$ and $Q \in \mathbb{R}[z]^{p \times m}$. Then $P$ and $Q$ are coprime if every $R \in$ $\mathbb{R}[\mathrm{z}]^{p \times p}$ that left divides both $P$ and $Q$ is unimodular.

Definition 2.16. Let $P \in \mathbb{R}[z]^{p \times m}$. Then $\operatorname{deg} P$ is the maximum degree of the entries of $P$. Furthermore, $P$ is monic if $p=m$ and $P(\mathrm{z})=\mathrm{z}^{\operatorname{deg} P} I_{m}+P_{0}(\mathrm{z})$, where $P_{0} \in \mathbb{R}[\mathrm{z}]^{m \times m}$ and $\operatorname{deg} P_{0}<\operatorname{deg} P$.

Definition 2.17. Let $D \in \mathbb{R}[z]^{p \times p}$, and $N \in \mathbb{R}[z]^{p \times m}$, assume that $D$ is nonsingular, and assume that $G=D^{-1} N$. Then $(D, N)$ is a left polynomial fraction description (LPFD) of $G$. Furthermore, if $D$ and $N$ are coprime, then $(D, N)$ is a coprime left polynomial fraction description (CLPFD) of $G$. In addition, if $D$ is monic, then $(D, N)$ is a monic left polynomial fraction description (MLPFD) of $G$. Finally, if $D$ and $N$ are coprime and $D$ is monic, then $(D, N)$ is a monic coprime left polynomial fraction description (MCLPFD) of $G$.

Note that the terms 'matrix fraction description' and 'polynomial matrix fraction description' are used as alternatives to the term 'polynomial fraction description' in the literature.

Definition 2.18. Let $P \in \mathbb{R}[\mathrm{z}]^{p \times n}, Q \in \mathbb{R}[\mathrm{z}]^{p \times m}$ and $R \in \mathbb{R}[\mathrm{z}]^{p \times p}$. Then $R$ is a greatest common left divisor of $P$ and $Q$ if there exists $\hat{P} \in \mathbb{R}[z]^{p \times n}, \hat{Q} \in \mathbb{R}[\mathrm{z}]^{p \times m}$ such that $P=R \hat{P}, Q=R \hat{Q}$ and $\hat{P}$ and $\hat{Q}$ are coprime.

Definition 2.19. Let $G \in \mathbb{R}(\mathrm{z})_{\text {prop }}^{p \times m}$, let $(D, N)$ be an LPFD of $G$, and, for all $k \geq 0$, let $u_{k} \in \mathbb{C}^{m}$ satisfy

$$
\begin{equation*}
N(\mathbf{q}) u_{k}=0 . \tag{2.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then, (2.4) is the zero dynamics of $(D, N)$. If, in addition, $(D, N)$ is a CLPFD of $G$, then (2.4) is the zero dynamics of $G$.

Definition 2.20. Let $y_{-n}, y_{-n+1}, \ldots, y_{-1} \in \mathbb{R}^{p}$. Consider the input-output model of a linear timevarying system given by, for all $k \geq 0$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
y_{k}+D_{1, k} y_{k-1}+\cdots+D_{n, k} y_{k-n}=N_{0, k} u_{k}+\cdots+N_{n, k} u_{k-n}, \tag{2.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

where, $u_{k} \in \mathbb{R}^{m}$ is the input, $y_{k} \in \mathbb{R}^{p}$ is the output, $D_{1, k}, \ldots, D_{n, k} \in \mathbb{R}^{p \times p}$, and $N_{0, k}, \ldots, N_{n, k} \in$ $\mathbb{R}^{p \times m}$. Define

$$
\begin{gather*}
D_{k}\left(\mathbf{q}^{-1}\right) \triangleq I_{p}+D_{1, k} \mathbf{q}^{-1}+\cdots+D_{n, k} \mathbf{q}^{-n}  \tag{2.6}\\
N_{k}\left(\mathbf{q}^{-1}\right) \triangleq N_{0, k}+N_{1, k} \mathbf{q}^{-1}+\cdots+N_{n, k} \mathbf{q}^{-n} . \tag{2.7}
\end{gather*}
$$

Then, $G_{k} \triangleq D_{k}^{-1} N_{k}$ is the time-domain transfer function at step $k$ of the system represented by (2.5). In terms of $G_{k},(2.5)$ is written as

$$
\begin{equation*}
y_{k}=G_{k}\left(\mathbf{q}^{-1}\right) u_{k}, \tag{2.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

and in terms of $N_{k}$ and $D_{k}$, (2.5) is written as

$$
\begin{equation*}
D_{k}\left(\mathbf{q}^{-1}\right) y_{k}=N_{k}\left(\mathbf{q}^{-1}\right) u_{k}, \tag{2.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

Definition 2.21. Consider the LTV state space model

$$
\begin{align*}
x_{k+1} & =A_{k} x_{k}+B_{k} u_{k},  \tag{2.10}\\
y_{k} & =C_{k} x_{k}+E_{k} u_{k}, \tag{2.11}
\end{align*}
$$

where, for all $k \geq 0, x_{k} \in \mathbb{R}^{n}$ is the state, $u_{k} \in \mathbb{R}^{m}$ is the input, and $y_{k} \in \mathbb{R}^{p}$ is the output. Define
the observability matrix at step $k$ as

$$
\mathcal{O}_{k} \triangleq\left[\begin{array}{c}
C_{k}  \tag{2.12}\\
C_{k+1} A_{k} \\
C_{k+2} A_{k+1} A_{k} \\
\vdots \\
C_{k+n-1} A_{k+n-2} \ldots A_{k+1} A_{k}
\end{array}\right]
$$

and the controllability matrix at step $k$ as

$$
\mathcal{C}_{k} \triangleq\left[\begin{array}{lllll}
B_{k-1} & A_{k-1} B_{k-2} & A_{k-1} A_{k-2} B_{k-3} & \cdots & A_{k-1} \ldots A_{k-n+1} B_{k-n} \tag{2.13}
\end{array}\right]
$$

If, for all $k \geq 0, \operatorname{rank} \mathcal{O}_{k}=n$, then $(A, C)$ is completely observable. If, for all $k \geq n, \operatorname{rank} \mathcal{C}_{k}=n$, then $(A, B)$ is completely controllable. Furthermore, if $(A, B)$ is completely controllable and $(A, C)$ is completely observable, then $(A, B, C, E)$ is minimal.

Definition 2.22. Let $D_{1, k}, \ldots, D_{n, k} \in \mathbb{R}^{p \times p}$, let $N_{0, k}, \ldots, N_{n, k} \in \mathbb{R}^{p \times m}$, let $y_{-n}, \ldots, y_{-1} \in \mathbb{R}^{p}$ be initial output data, let $\left(\theta_{k}\right)_{k=-n}^{\infty} \in \mathbb{R}^{r}$, and, for all $k \geq-n$, let $u_{k}: \mathbb{R}^{r} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{m}$. Then, the FIA sequence $\left(y_{k}\left(\theta_{k}\right)\right)_{k=0}^{\infty}$ is given by the fixed-input-argument (FIA) filter

$$
\begin{equation*}
y_{k}\left(\theta_{k}\right)+D_{1, k} y_{k-1}\left(\theta_{k-1}\right)+\cdots+D_{n, k} y_{k-n}\left(\theta_{k-n}\right)=N_{0, k} u_{k}\left(\theta_{k}\right)+\cdots+N_{n, k} u_{k-n}\left(\theta_{k}\right), \tag{2.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

where, for all $k \in[-n,-1], y_{k}\left(\theta_{k}\right) \triangleq y_{k}$.

Note that, in (2.14), at each step $k$, the arguments of $u_{k-n}, \ldots, u_{k}$ are fixed at the current value $\theta_{k}$. In contrast, the left hand side defines the current output $y_{k}\left(\theta_{k}\right)$ which depends on the past output values $y_{k-n}\left(\theta_{k-n}\right), \ldots, y_{k-1}\left(\theta_{k-1}\right)$. In terms of $\mathbf{q}^{-1},(2.14)$ is written as either

$$
\begin{equation*}
D_{k}\left(\mathbf{q}^{-1}\right) y_{k}\left(\theta_{k}\right)=N_{k}\left(\mathbf{q}^{-1}\right) u_{k}\left(\theta_{\bar{k}}\right), \tag{2.15}
\end{equation*}
$$

or

$$
\begin{equation*}
y_{k}\left(\theta_{k}\right)=G_{k}\left(\mathbf{q}^{-1}\right) u_{k}\left(\theta_{\bar{k}}\right), \tag{2.16}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $G_{k} \triangleq D_{k}^{-1} N_{k}$.

## CHAPTER 3

## Finite-Time Input Estimation

This chapter considers finite-time input estimation for discrete-time linear time-invariant systems in the case where the initial condition is unknown. Finite-time input estimation is the exact reconstruction of input after a finite number of steps. First, two specific constructions of finite-impulse-response (FIR) delayed left inverse for systems with zero nonzero zeros are presented; one using the Smith-McMillan form does not necessarily provide the minimal delay possible and the second using the Smith-McMillan form at infinity gives an FIR delayed left inverse with the minimal delay. Next, it is shown that, in the presence of an arbitrary unknown initial condition, finite-time input estimation is possible using a delayed left inverse $H$ if and only if $H$ is FIR. Finally, it is shown that a transfer function with full column normal rank has an FIR delayed left inverse with the minimal delay if and only if the system has zero nonzero zeros.

Let $G \in \mathbb{R}(\mathrm{z})_{\text {prop }}^{p \times m}$. If $H$ is a delayed left inverse of $G$ with delay $d$, then the output of $H G$ is equal to the $d$-step-delayed input of $H G$. However, $H G$ does not account for the free response of the state space model formed by cascading state space models of $G$ and $H$. The missing free response can be accounted for by specifying initial conditions of realizations of $G$ and $H$. Let

$$
G \stackrel{\min }{\sim}\left[\begin{array}{c|c}
A_{G} & B_{G}  \tag{3.1}\\
\hline C_{G} & D_{G}
\end{array}\right], \quad H \stackrel{\min }{\sim}\left[\begin{array}{c|c}
A_{H} & B_{H} \\
\hline C_{H} & D_{H}
\end{array}\right],
$$

and, for all $k \geq 0$, consider the state space equations

$$
\begin{align*}
x_{G, k+1} & =A_{G} x_{G, k}+B_{G} u_{k},  \tag{3.2}\\
y_{k} & =C_{G} x_{G, k}+D_{G} u_{k}, \tag{3.3}
\end{align*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{align*}
x_{H, k+1} & =A_{H} x_{H, k}+B_{H} y_{k},  \tag{3.4}\\
z_{k} & =C_{H} x_{H, k}+D_{H} y_{k} . \tag{3.5}
\end{align*}
$$

Then, the state space realization of the cascade $H G$ is given by

$$
\begin{align*}
x_{k+1} & =A x_{k}+B u_{k},  \tag{3.6}\\
z_{k} & =C x_{k}+D u_{k}, \tag{3.7}
\end{align*}
$$

where

$$
\begin{align*}
x \triangleq\left[\begin{array}{l}
x_{G} \\
x_{H}
\end{array}\right], A \triangleq\left[\begin{array}{cc}
A_{G} & 0 \\
B_{H} C_{G} & A_{H}
\end{array}\right], \quad B \triangleq\left[\begin{array}{c}
B_{G} \\
B_{H} D_{G}
\end{array}\right],  \tag{3.8}\\
C \triangleq\left[\begin{array}{cc}
D_{H} C_{G} & C_{H}
\end{array}\right], \quad D \triangleq D_{H} D_{G} . \tag{3.9}
\end{align*}
$$

Note that the realization (3.6), (3.7) of $H G$ is not necessarily minimal.

### 3.1 Effect of Zeros on Input Estimation

If the continuous-time system $G$ has a transmission zero, then it follows from [115, p. 398] that there exist an initial condition and nonzero input such that the response of a minimal state space realization of $G$ is identically zero. The following result is the discrete-time analogue and is
partially given by Lemma 2.7 in [86, p. 25].
Proposition 3.1. Let $G \in \mathbb{R}(\mathrm{z})_{\text {prop }}^{p \times m}$, where $G \stackrel{\min }{\sim}\left[\begin{array}{l|l}A & B \\ \hline C & D\end{array}\right]$ and $A \in \mathbb{R}^{n \times n}$, and, for all $k \geq 0$, consider

$$
\begin{align*}
x_{k+1} & =A x_{k}+B u_{k},  \tag{3.10}\\
y_{k} & =C x_{k}+D u_{k} . \tag{3.11}
\end{align*}
$$

Assume that $\mathrm{z}_{0} \in \mathbb{C}$ is a transmission zero of $G$, and let $\left[\begin{array}{l}\bar{x} \\ \bar{u}\end{array}\right] \in \mathcal{N}\left(z\left(\mathrm{z}_{0}\right)\right)$ have nonzero real part, where $z$ is the Rosenbrock system matrix. Define the initial state $x_{0} \triangleq \operatorname{Re}(\bar{x})$, and, for all $k \geq 0$, define the input sequence $u_{k} \triangleq \operatorname{Re}\left(\mathrm{z}_{0}^{k} \bar{u}\right)$. Then, for all $k \geq 0, y_{k}=0$. Furthermore, $\bar{u} \neq 0$.

Proof. By assumption,

$$
\left[\begin{array}{cc}
\mathrm{z}_{0} I-A & -B \\
C & D
\end{array}\right]\left[\begin{array}{l}
\bar{x} \\
\bar{u}
\end{array}\right]=0
$$

and thus

$$
\begin{align*}
\left(\mathrm{z}_{0} I-A\right) \bar{x} & =B \bar{u}  \tag{3.12}\\
C \bar{x}+D \bar{u} & =0 \tag{3.13}
\end{align*}
$$

Using (3.12) and the fact that $\mathrm{z}_{0}^{0}=1$, it follows from (3.10) that $x_{1}=A \operatorname{Re}(\bar{x})+B \operatorname{Re}(\bar{u})=$ $A \operatorname{Re}(\bar{x})+\operatorname{Re}\left(\mathrm{z}_{0} \bar{x}\right)-A \operatorname{Re}(\bar{x})=\operatorname{Re}\left(\mathrm{z}_{0} \bar{x}\right)$. Proceeding similarly, it follows that, for all $k \geq 0$, $x_{k}=\operatorname{Re}\left(\mathrm{z}_{0}^{k} \bar{x}\right)$. Thus (3.11) and (3.13) together imply that, for all $k \geq 0, y_{k}=C \operatorname{Re}\left(\mathrm{z}_{0}^{k} \bar{x}\right)+$ $D \operatorname{Re}\left(\mathrm{z}_{0}^{k} \bar{u}\right)=\operatorname{Re}\left(\mathrm{z}_{0}^{k}(C \bar{x}+D \bar{u})\right)=0$.

Next, suppose that $\bar{u}=0$. Hence (3.13) implies that $C \bar{x}=0$. Then it follows from (3.10) and
(3.11) that

$$
\left[\begin{array}{c}
y_{0} \\
y_{1} \\
\vdots \\
y_{n-1}
\end{array}\right]=\mathcal{O R e}(\bar{x})
$$

where $\mathcal{O}$ is the observability matrix obtained from $(A, C)$. Since $\mathcal{O}$ has full column rank and, for all $k \geq 0, y_{k}=0$, it follows that $\operatorname{Re}(\bar{x})=0$, which is a contradiction. Thus $\bar{u} \neq 0$.

Note that, in the case where $z_{0} \neq 0$, the input $u$ that produces the zero output has the property that, for all $k \geq 0, u_{k} \neq 0$. Since the zero input also produces the zero output, finite-time input estimation is impossible. However, in the case where $\mathrm{z}_{0}=0$, the input $u$ that produces the zero output is $\{\operatorname{Re}(\bar{u}), 0,0, \ldots\}$. The fact that $u_{k}$ is nonzero only at the initial time step suggests that finite-time input estimation may be possible in this case as long as $G$ has zero nonzero zeros. In fact, delayed left inverses for systems with this property is constructed in the next two sections.

### 3.2 Smith-McMillan Construction of a Delayed Left Inverse

In this section, we use the Smith-Mcmillan form to construct an FIR delayed left inverse for systems with zero nonzero zeros. The following result given by Theorem 6.7.5 in [116, p. 514] presents the Smith-McMillan form.

Theorem 3.2. Let $G \in \mathbb{R}(\mathrm{z})_{\text {prop }}^{p \times m}$, and let $\rho \triangleq \operatorname{rank} G$. Then there exist unimodular matrices $S_{1} \in \mathbb{R}(\mathrm{z})^{p \times p}$ and $S_{2} \in \mathbb{R}(\mathrm{z})^{m \times m}$ and unique monic polynomials $p_{1}, \ldots, p_{\rho}, q_{1}, \ldots, q_{\rho} \in \mathbb{R}(\mathrm{z})$ such that $p_{i}$ and $q_{i}$ are coprime for all $i \in\{1, \ldots, \rho\}, p_{i}$ divides $p_{i+1}$ for all $i \in\{1, \ldots, \rho-1\}$,
$q_{i+1}$ divides $q_{i}$ for all $i \in\{1, \ldots, \rho-1\}$, and $G=S_{1} S S_{2}$, where

$$
S=\left[\begin{array}{cccc}
p_{1} / q_{1} & & & 0_{\rho \times(m-\rho)}  \tag{3.14}\\
& \ddots & & \\
& & p_{\rho} / q_{\rho} & \\
0_{(p-\rho) \times \rho} & & & 0_{(p-\rho) \times(m-\rho)}
\end{array}\right]
$$

$S$ is the Smith-McMillan form of $G$. The roots of the polynomial $q_{1} q_{2} \ldots q_{\rho}$ are the poles of $G$, and the roots of the polynomial $p_{1} p_{2} \ldots p_{\rho}$ are the transmission zeros of $G$.

Proposition 3.3. Let $G \in \mathbb{R}(\mathrm{z})_{\text {prop }}^{p \times m}$, assume that $G$ has full column normal rank, and assume that $G$ has zero nonzero zeros. Then, $H_{s} \triangleq S_{2}^{-1} S^{+} S_{1}^{-1}$ has zero nonzero poles, where $S, S_{1}$, and $S_{2}$ are defined in Theorem 3.2 and $S^{+} \triangleq\left(S^{\mathrm{T}} S\right)^{-1} S^{\mathrm{T}}$.

Proof. Since $G$ has zero nonzero zeros, each polynomial $p_{1}, p_{2}, \ldots, p_{\rho}$, defined in Theorem 3.2, is a power of z. Hence $S^{+}$has zero nonzero poles. Note that since $S_{1}$ and $S_{2}$ are unimodular matrices, the entries of $S_{1}^{-1}$ and $S_{2}^{-1}$ are polynomials. Thus $H_{s}$ has zero nonzero poles.

Corollary 3.4. Let $G$ and $H_{s}$ be as defined in Proposition 3.3, and let $d_{0}$ be the smallest nonnegative integer such that $H(\mathrm{z})=\mathrm{z}^{-d_{0}} H_{s}(\mathrm{z})$ is a proper transfer function. Then, $H$ is an FIR delayed left inverse of $G$.
Example 3.5. Let $G(\mathrm{z})=\left[\begin{array}{c}1 \\ \overline{\mathrm{z}} \\ 1 \\ \frac{\mathrm{z}^{2}}{}\end{array}\right]$. Then

$$
S(\mathrm{z})=\left[\begin{array}{c}
1 \\
\frac{\mathrm{z}^{2}}{} \\
0
\end{array}\right], \quad S_{1}(\mathrm{z})=\left[\begin{array}{ll}
\mathrm{z} & 1 \\
1 & 0
\end{array}\right], \quad S_{2}(\mathrm{z})=1
$$

such that $S$ is the Smith-Mcmillan form of $G$ and $G=S_{1} S S_{2}$. Evaluating the expression for $H$ given in Corollary 3.4 yields $H=\left[\begin{array}{ll}0 & 1\end{array}\right]$ such that $H(\mathrm{z}) G(\mathrm{z})=\mathrm{z}^{-2}$. Hence, $H$ is an FIR delayed
left inverse of $G$ with delay 2. However, note that $H=\left[\begin{array}{ll}1 & 0\end{array}\right]$ is a delayed left inverse of $G$ such that $H(\mathrm{z}) G(\mathrm{z})=\mathrm{z}^{-1}$. Hence this method does not necessarily give an FIR delayed left inverse with the minimal possible delay.

### 3.3 Construction of an FIR Delayed Left Inverse with the Minimal Delay

In this section, we use the Smith-McMillan form at infinity [80] to construct an FIR delayed left inverse with the minimal delay for systems with zero nonzero zeros. The main result is Theorem 3.12, which presents the expression for the constructed FIR inverse.

Lemma 3.6. Let $U \in \mathbb{R}[\mathrm{z}]^{n \times n}$, assume that $U$ is unimodular, and, for all $\mathrm{z} \neq 0$, define $V(\mathrm{z}) \triangleq$ $U(1 / \mathrm{z})$. Then $V$ is biproper and FIR.

Proof. Since $U$ is a polynomial matrix, each entry of $U$ is of the form $\alpha_{k} \mathrm{z}^{k}+\cdots+\alpha_{1} \mathrm{z}+\alpha_{0}$, where $k$ is a nonnegative integer and $\alpha_{0}, \ldots, \alpha_{k}$ are real numbers. Then the corresponding entry of $V$ has the form $\alpha_{k} \mathrm{z}^{-k}+\cdots+\alpha_{1} \mathrm{z}^{-1}+\alpha_{0}$, which is proper and FIR. Hence $V$ is proper and FIR. Next, define the nonzero constant $\beta \triangleq \operatorname{det} U(\mathrm{z})$, and note that $\lim _{\mathrm{z} \rightarrow \infty} \operatorname{det} V(\mathrm{z})=\lim _{\mathrm{z} \rightarrow \infty} \operatorname{det} U(1 / \mathrm{z})=$ $\lim _{\mathrm{z} \rightarrow 0} \operatorname{det} U(\mathrm{z})=\beta \neq 0$. Hence $V$ is biproper.

Lemma 3.7. Let $G \in \mathbb{R}(\mathrm{z})_{\text {prop }}^{p \times m}$ and, for all $\mathrm{z} \neq 0$, define $\hat{G}(\mathrm{z}) \triangleq G(1 / \mathrm{z})$. Then the following statements hold:
i) $\hat{G}$ has no poles at zero.
ii) If $G$ has zero nonzero zeros, then $\hat{G}$ has zero nonzero zeros.

Proof. To prove $i$ ), suppose that $\hat{G}$ has at least one pole at zero. Then at least one entry of $\hat{G}$ is of the form $\frac{N(\mathrm{z})}{\mathrm{z}^{k} D(\mathrm{z})}$, where $k$ is a positive integer, $N$ and $D$ are polynomials such that $N(0) \neq 0$, and
$D(0) \neq 0$. Then the corresponding entry of $G$ is $\frac{\mathrm{z}^{k} N(1 / \mathrm{z})}{D(1 / \mathrm{z})}$. Since $N(0) \neq 0$ and $D(0) \neq 0$, it follows that $\frac{N(1 / \mathrm{z})}{D(1 / \mathrm{z})}$ is exactly proper and hence $\frac{\mathrm{z}^{k} N(1 / \mathrm{z})}{D(1 / \mathrm{z})}$ is improper, which is a contradiction. Hence $\hat{G}$ has no poles at zero.

To prove $i i$, define $\rho \triangleq \operatorname{rank} G=\operatorname{rank} \hat{G}$. Suppose that $\mathrm{z}_{0}$ is a nonzero zero of $\hat{G}$. Then $\operatorname{rank} G\left(1 / \mathrm{z}_{0}\right)=\operatorname{rank} \hat{G}\left(\mathrm{z}_{0}\right)<\rho$. Thus $1 / \mathrm{z}_{0}$ is a nonzero zero of $G$, which is a contradiction. Hence $\hat{G}$ has zero nonzero zeros.

The following result presents the Smith-McMillanform at infinity $S_{\infty}$ of $G$. The proof presented here, which is different from the proof in [80], is constructive; this construction is also used to prove Theorem 3.12.

Theorem 3.8. Let $G \in \mathbb{R}(\mathrm{z})_{\text {prop }}^{p \times m}$, define $\rho \triangleq \operatorname{rank} G$, and define $\rho_{0} \triangleq \rho-\operatorname{rank} G(\infty)$. Then there exist biproper transfer functions $W \in \mathbb{R}(\mathrm{z})_{\text {prop }}^{p \times p}$ and $V \in \mathbb{R}(\mathrm{z})_{\text {prop }}^{m \times m}$ and integers $\iota_{1} \geq \iota_{2} \geq \cdots \geq$ $\iota_{\rho_{0}}>0$ such that $G=W S_{\infty} V$, where

$$
S_{\infty}(\mathrm{z}) \triangleq\left[\begin{array}{rrrrrr}
\mathrm{z}^{-\iota_{1}} & & & & & 0_{\rho \times(m-\rho)}  \tag{3.15}\\
\ddots & & & & \\
& \mathrm{z}^{-\iota_{\rho_{0}}} & & & \\
& & 1 & & & \\
& & \ddots & & \\
& & & 1 & \\
0_{(p-\rho) \times \rho} & & & & & 0_{(p-\rho) \times(m-\rho)}
\end{array}\right]
$$

Proof. For all $\mathrm{z} \neq 0$, define $\hat{G}(\mathrm{z}) \triangleq G(1 / \mathrm{z})$. Note that $\operatorname{rank} \hat{G}=\operatorname{rank} G=\rho$. Let $\hat{G}=\hat{S}_{1} \hat{S} \hat{S}_{2}$, where $\hat{S} \in \mathbb{R}(\mathrm{z})^{p \times m}$ is the Smith-McMillan form of $\hat{G}$, and $\hat{S}_{1} \in \mathbb{R}(\mathrm{z})^{p \times p}$ and $\hat{S}_{2} \in \mathbb{R}(\mathrm{z})^{m \times m}$ are unimodular matrices. Define $S_{1}(\mathrm{z}) \triangleq \hat{S}_{1}(1 / \mathrm{z}), S(\mathrm{z}) \triangleq \hat{S}(1 / \mathrm{z})$, and $S_{2}(\mathrm{z}) \triangleq \hat{S}_{2}(1 / \mathrm{z})$. It follows from Lemma 3.7 that $\hat{G}$ has no poles at zero and thus $\hat{S}$ has no poles at zero. Hence $\hat{S}$ is of the
form
where $\iota_{1} \geq \cdots \geq \iota_{\kappa}>0$ and $\kappa \triangleq \rho-\operatorname{rank} \hat{G}(0) . N_{i}$ and $D_{i}$, for $i=1, \ldots, \rho$, are polynomials such that $N_{i}(0) \neq 0$, and $D_{i}(0) \neq 0$. Then

$$
S(\mathrm{z})=\left[\begin{array}{ccccccc}
\frac{\mathrm{z}^{-\iota_{1}} N_{1}(1 / \mathrm{z})}{D_{1}(1 / \mathrm{z})} & & & & & & 0_{\rho \times(m-\rho)} \\
& \ddots & & & & \\
& & \frac{\mathrm{z}^{-\iota_{\kappa}} N_{\kappa}(1 / \mathrm{z})}{D_{\kappa}(1 / \mathrm{z})} & & & \\
& & & \frac{N_{\kappa+1}(1 / \mathrm{z})}{D_{\kappa+1}(1 / \mathrm{z})} & & & \\
& & & & \ddots & & \\
& & & & & \frac{N_{\rho}(1 / \mathrm{z})}{D_{\rho}(1 / \mathrm{z})} & \\
0_{(p-\rho) \times \rho} & & & & & & 0_{(p-\rho) \times(m-\rho)}
\end{array}\right]
$$

Since, for all $i=1, \ldots, \rho, N_{i}(0) \neq 0$, and $D_{i}(0) \neq 0$, it follows that $N_{i}(1 / \mathrm{z})$ and $D_{i}(1 / \mathrm{z})$ are
exactly proper and hence $S$ is proper. Therefore, $S$ can be factored as $S=S_{0} D_{v}$, where

$$
S_{0}(\mathrm{z}) \triangleq\left[\begin{array}{rrrrrr}
\mathrm{z}^{-\iota_{1}} & & & & 0_{\rho \times(m-\rho)} \\
\ddots & & & & \\
& \mathrm{z}^{-\iota_{\kappa}} & & & \\
& 1 & & & \\
& & \ddots & & \\
& & & 1 & \\
0_{(p-\rho) \times \rho} & & & & & 0_{(p-\rho) \times(m-\rho)}
\end{array}\right] .
$$

and

$$
D_{v}(\mathrm{z}) \triangleq\left[\begin{array}{cccccc}
\frac{N_{1}(1 / \mathrm{z})}{D_{1}(1 / \mathrm{z})} & & & & &  \tag{3.16}\\
& \ddots & & & & \\
& & \frac{N_{\rho}(1 / \mathrm{z})}{D_{\rho}(1 / \mathrm{z})} & & & \\
& & & 1 & & \\
& & & & \ddots & \\
& & & & & 1
\end{array}\right]
$$

Note that $D_{v} \in \mathbb{R}(\mathrm{z})_{\text {prop }}^{m \times m}$ is a biproper diagonal matrix. Since $\hat{G}(0)=G(\infty)$, it follows that $\kappa=\rho_{0}$ and thus $S_{0}=S_{\infty}$. Now, for all $\mathrm{z} \neq 0, G(\mathrm{z})=\hat{G}(1 / \mathrm{z})=\hat{S}_{1}(1 / \mathrm{z}) \hat{S}(1 / \mathrm{z}) \hat{S}_{2}(1 / \mathrm{z})=$ $S_{1}(\mathrm{z}) S(\mathrm{z}) S_{2}(\mathrm{z})$. Since $\hat{S}_{1}$ and $\hat{S}_{2}$ are unimodular, it follows from Lemma 3.6 that $S_{1}$ and $S_{2}$ are biproper. Defining $W \triangleq S_{1}$ and $V \triangleq D_{v} S_{2}$, it follows that $G=S_{1} S S_{2}=S_{1} S_{0} D_{v} S_{2}=$ $S_{1} S_{\infty} D_{v} S_{2}=W S_{\infty} V$.

Note that $\rho_{0}$ is the number of infinite zero directions, for all $i=1, \ldots, \rho_{0}, \iota_{i}$ is the number of infinite zeros in the ith direction, and $\iota \triangleq \sum_{j=1}^{\rho_{0}} \iota_{j}$ is the number of infinite zeros of $G$.

The following result is given by Theorem 1 in [117].
Lemma 3.9. Let $G_{1} \in \mathbb{R}(\mathrm{z})_{\text {prop }}^{p \times m}$ and $G_{2} \in \mathbb{R}(\mathrm{z})_{\text {prop }}^{p \times m}$ be such that $G_{2}=W G_{1} V$, where $W \in$
$\mathbb{R}(\mathrm{z})_{\text {prop }}^{p \times p}$ and $V \in \mathbb{R}(\mathrm{z})_{\text {prop }}^{m \times m}$ are biproper. Then, for all $i \geq 0, \beta_{i}\left(G_{1}\right)=\beta_{i}\left(G_{2}\right)$.

The following result is given by Theorem 4 in [25].

Proposition 3.10. Let $G \in \mathbb{R}(\mathrm{z})_{\text {prop }}^{p \times m}$ and $d \geq 0$. Then $G$ is delayed left invertible with delay $d$ if and only if $\operatorname{rank} \mathcal{T}_{d}-\operatorname{rank} \mathcal{T}_{d-1}=m$.

The following result is based on the discussion of the pole/zero structure at infinity given in [117].

Proposition 3.11. Let $G \in \mathbb{R}(\mathrm{z})_{\text {prop }}^{p \times m}$, assume that $G$ has full column normal rank, and define $\iota_{1}$ as in Theorem 3.8. Then $\eta_{G}=\iota_{1}$.

Proof. Let $H_{\infty, i}$ be the $i$ th Markov parameter of $S_{\infty}$ and $\mathcal{T}_{\infty, i}$ be the $i$ th Markov block-Toeplitz matrix associated with $S_{\infty}$, where $S_{\infty}$ is the Smith-McMillan form at infinity of $G$. Define the multiset $F \triangleq\left\{\iota_{1}, \ldots, \iota_{\rho_{0}}, 0, \ldots, 0\right\}$ with $\rho$ elements, where $\iota_{1}, \ldots, \iota_{\rho_{0}}$ and $\rho$ are defined in Theorem 3.8. For all $i \geq 0$, let $F_{i}$ be the multiset consisting of all elements of $F$ that are less than or equal to $i$, and let $\left|F_{i}\right|$ denote the cardinality of $F_{i}$.

Note that, for all $i \geq 0$, each row of $\mathcal{T}_{\infty, i}$ is either zero or has exactly one nonzero entry that is equal to one, and the nonzero rows of $\mathcal{T}_{\infty, i}$ are linearly independent. It thus follows that $\beta_{i}\left(S_{\infty}\right)=\operatorname{rank} \mathcal{T}_{\infty, i}-\operatorname{rank} \mathcal{T}_{\infty, i-1}=\operatorname{rank}\left[\begin{array}{lll}H_{\infty, 0} & \cdots & H_{\infty, i}\end{array}\right]=\left|F_{i}\right|$. Hence, Theorem 3.8 and Lemma 3.9 imply that, for all $i \geq 0, \beta_{i}(G)=\beta_{i}\left(S_{\infty}\right)=\left|F_{i}\right|$.

Note that $\max _{i \geq 0} \beta_{i}\left(S_{\infty}\right)=\max _{i \geq 0}\left|F_{i}\right|=|F|=\rho$. Since $\iota_{1}$ is the largest element in $F$, it follows that the smallest $i$ such that $\left|F_{i}\right|=\rho$ is $\iota_{1}$. Thus $\rho=\left|F_{\iota_{1}}\right|=\beta_{\iota_{1}}(G)=\operatorname{rank} \mathcal{T}_{\iota_{1}}-$ $\operatorname{rank} \mathcal{T}_{\iota_{1}-1}$, where $\mathcal{T}_{i}$ is the $i$ th Markov block-Toeplitz matrix associated with $G$. Since $G$ has full column rank, it follows that $\rho=m$, and thus $\iota_{1}$ is the smallest $i$ such that rank $\mathcal{T}_{i}-\operatorname{rank} \mathcal{T}_{i-1}=m$. Hence Proposition 3.10 implies that $\eta_{G}=\iota_{1}$.

The following result constructs an FIR delayed left inverse of $G$ with the minimal delay.

Theorem 3.12. Let $G \in \mathbb{R}(\mathrm{z})_{\text {prop }}^{p \times m}$, assume that $G$ has full column rank, and assume that $G$ has zero nonzero zeros. Then there exist biproper transfer functions $W \in \mathbb{R}(\mathrm{z})_{\text {prop }}^{p \times p}$ and $V \in \mathbb{R}(\mathrm{z})_{\text {prop }}^{m \times m}$
such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
H_{\infty}(\mathrm{z}) \triangleq \mathrm{z}^{-\eta_{G}} V^{-1}(\mathrm{z}) S_{\infty}^{\mathrm{T}}(1 / \mathrm{z}) W^{-1}(\mathrm{z}) \tag{3.17}
\end{equation*}
$$

is an FIR delayed left inverse of $G$ with delay $\eta_{G}$, where

$$
S_{\infty}(\mathrm{z}) \triangleq\left[\begin{array}{rrrrr}
\mathrm{z}^{-\iota_{1}} & & & &  \tag{3.18}\\
\ddots & & & \\
& & \mathrm{z}^{-\iota_{\rho_{0}}} & & \\
& & 1 & & \\
& & & \ddots & \\
& & & & 1 \\
& & 0_{(p-m) \times m} &
\end{array}\right]
$$

is the Smith-McMillan form at infinity of $G, \iota_{1} \geq \iota_{2} \geq \cdots \geq \iota_{\rho_{0}}>0$ are integers, and $\rho_{0} \triangleq$ $m-\operatorname{rank} G(\infty)$.

Proof. Define, for all $\mathrm{z} \neq 0, \hat{G}(\mathrm{z}) \triangleq G(1 / \mathrm{z})$. Note that $\operatorname{rank} \hat{G}=\operatorname{rank} G=m$. Let $\hat{G}=$ $\hat{S}_{1} \hat{S} \hat{S}_{2}$, where $\hat{S}$ is the Smith-McMillan form of $\hat{G}$, and $\hat{S}_{1}$ and $\hat{S}_{2}$ are unimodular matrices. Define $S_{1}(\mathrm{z}) \triangleq \hat{S}_{1}(1 / \mathrm{z}), S(\mathrm{z}) \triangleq \hat{S}(1 / \mathrm{z})$, and $S_{2}(\mathrm{z}) \triangleq \hat{S}_{2}(1 / \mathrm{z})$. Following the same steps given in the proof of Theorem 3.8 yields $G=W S_{\infty} V$, where $W \triangleq S_{1}, V \triangleq D_{v} S_{2}, S_{\infty}$ is given by (3.18), and $D_{v}$ is given by (3.16) with $\rho$ replaced by $m$. Since $\hat{S}_{1}$ and $\hat{S}_{2}$ are unimodular, it follows that $\hat{S}_{1}^{-1}$ and $\hat{S}_{2}^{-1}$ are unimodular and thus Lemma 3.6 implies that $W^{-1}=S_{1}^{-1}$ and $S_{2}^{-1}$ are FIR. Since $G$ has zero nonzero zeros, it follows from Lemma 3.7 that $\hat{G}$ has zero nonzero zeros. Hence, $\hat{S}$ has zero nonzero zeros. Hence, for all $i=1, \ldots, m, N_{i}=1$ in (3.16). Hence $D_{v}^{-1}$ is FIR. Thus $V^{-1}=S_{2}^{-1} D_{v}^{-1}$ is FIR, and hence $H_{\infty}$ is FIR. Next, it follows from Theorem 3.11 that $\eta_{G}=\iota_{1}$. Hence, $\mathrm{z}^{-\eta_{G}} S_{\infty}^{\mathrm{T}}(1 / \mathrm{z})$ is proper. Note that $W^{-1}$ and $V^{-1}$ are biproper and thus $H_{\infty}$ is proper. Since $H_{\infty}(\mathrm{z}) G(\mathrm{z})=\mathrm{z}^{-\eta_{G}} V^{-1}(\mathrm{z}) S_{\infty}^{\mathrm{T}}(1 / \mathrm{z}) W^{-1}(\mathrm{z}) W(\mathrm{z}) S_{\infty}(\mathrm{z}) V(\mathrm{z})=\mathrm{z}^{-\eta_{G}} I_{m}$, it follows that $H_{\infty}$ is an FIR delayed left inverse of $G$ with delay $\eta_{G}$.

### 3.4 Input Estimation using FIR Delayed Left Inverse

The main result in this section shows that, in the presence of an arbitrary unknown initial condition, finite-time input estimation is possible using a delayed left inverse $H$ if and only if $H$ is FIR. The following lemma will be needed.

Lemma 3.13. Let $G \in \mathbb{R}()_{\text {prop }}^{p \times m}$ and $H \in \mathbb{R}(\mathrm{z})_{\text {prop }}^{m \times p}$, with minimal state space realizations (3.1)(3.5). Assume that $H$ is FIR and that $H$ is a delayed left inverse of $G$ with delay $d$. Define $K(\mathrm{z}) \triangleq H(\mathrm{z}) C_{G}\left(\mathrm{z} I-A_{G}\right)^{-1}$. Then $K$ is FIR.

Proof. For the state space realization of $H G$ given by (3.6)-(3.9), note that $\operatorname{spec}(A)=\operatorname{spec}\left(A_{G}\right) \cup$ $\operatorname{spec}\left(A_{H}\right)$. Since $H$ is FIR, it follows that $\operatorname{spec}\left(A_{H}\right)=\{0\}$. Therefore, each nonzero eigenvalue of $A$ is an eigenvalue of $A_{G}$. Since $H G$ is FIR, it follows that each nonzero eigenvalue of $A$ (including multiplicity) is either an uncontrollable eigenvalue of $(A, B)$ or an unobservable eigenvalue of $(A, C)$. However, since $\left(A_{G}, B_{G}\right)$ is controllable, each nonzero eigenvalue of $A$ is contained in $\operatorname{spec}\left(A_{G}\right)$, and $A$ is lower triangular, it follows from the PBH test that each nonzero eigenvalue of $A$ is a controllable eigenvalue of $(A, B)$ and thus an unobservable eigenvalue of $(A, C)$. Defining

$$
B_{0} \triangleq\left[\begin{array}{c}
I_{n_{G}} \\
0
\end{array}\right], \quad D_{0} \triangleq 0,
$$

where $n_{G} \triangleq \operatorname{Mcdeg} G$, note that $\left(A, B_{0}, C, D_{0}\right)$ is a state space realization of $K$. Since each nonzero eigenvalue of $A$ is an unobservable eigenvalue of $(A, C)$, it follows that none of the nonzero eigenvalues of $A$ are poles of $K$. Hence, every pole of $K$ is zero, and thus $K$ is FIR.

Theorem 3.14. Let $G \in \mathbb{R}(\mathrm{z})_{\text {prop }}^{p \times m}$ and $H \in \mathbb{R}(\mathrm{z})_{\text {prop }}^{m \times p}$ with minimal state space realizations (3.1)(3.5), assume that $H$ is a delayed left inverse of $G$ with delay $d$, and define $K(\mathrm{z}) \triangleq H(\mathrm{z}) C_{G}(\mathrm{z} I-$ $\left.A_{G}\right)^{-1}$. Then the following statements hold:
i) If there exists a nonnegative integer $\nu$ such that, for all $k \geq \nu$ and all initial conditions $x_{G, 0}$
and $x_{H, 0}, z_{k}=u_{k-d}$, then $H$ is FIR.
ii) If H is FIR, then for all $k \geq \nu=\max \{$ ind $H$, ind $K, d\}$ and all initial conditions $x_{G, 0}$ and $x_{H, 0}, z_{k}=u_{k-d}$. If, in addition, $x_{H, 0}=0$, then $\nu=\max \{\operatorname{ind} K, d\}$.

Proof. Note that, for all $k \geq 0, z_{k}=z_{\text {free, } \mathrm{k}}+z_{\text {forced,k }}$, where $z_{\text {free }}$ and $z_{\text {forced }}$ denote the free response and forced response, respectively, of (3.6)-(3.9). Since $H(\mathrm{z}) G(\mathrm{z})=\mathrm{z}^{-d} I_{m}$, it follows that, for all $k \geq d, z_{\text {forced }, \mathrm{k}}=u_{k-d}$. Next, note that, for all $k \geq 0$,

$$
\begin{align*}
z_{\mathrm{free}, \mathrm{k}} & =C A^{k} x_{0} \\
& =\left[\begin{array}{ll}
D_{H} C_{G} & C_{H}
\end{array}\right]\left[\begin{array}{cc}
A_{G}^{k} & 0 \\
\sum_{i=0}^{k-1} A_{H}^{i} B_{H} C_{G} A_{G}^{k-i-1} & A_{H}^{k}
\end{array}\right]\left[\begin{array}{c}
x_{G, 0} \\
\\
x_{H, 0}
\end{array}\right]  \tag{3.19}\\
& =z_{G, k}+z_{H, k}
\end{align*}
$$

where

$$
\begin{aligned}
& z_{G, k} \triangleq\left(D_{H} C_{G} A_{G}^{k}+C_{H} \sum_{i=0}^{k-1} A_{H}^{i} B_{H} C_{G} A_{G}^{k-i-1}\right) x_{G, 0} \\
& z_{H, k} \triangleq C_{H} A_{H}^{k} x_{H, 0}
\end{aligned}
$$

To prove $i$, note that there exists a nonnegative integer $\nu$ such that, for all $k \geq \nu$ and all $x_{G, 0}$, $x_{H, 0}, z_{\text {free }, \mathrm{k}}=0$. Hence it follows from (3.19) that, for all $k \geq \nu$,

$$
\left[\begin{array}{ll}
D_{H} C_{G} & C_{H}
\end{array}\right]\left[\begin{array}{cc}
A_{G}^{k} & 0 \\
\sum_{i=0}^{k-1} A_{H}^{i} B_{H} C_{G} A_{G}^{k-i-1} & A_{H}^{k}
\end{array}\right]=0
$$

and thus, for all $k \geq \nu, C_{H} A_{H}^{k}=0$. Hence $H$ is FIR.
To prove $i$ ), note that since $H$ is FIR and thus $A_{H}$ is nilpotent, it follows that, for all $k \geq$ ind $H, z_{H, k}=0$. Noting that $z_{G}$ is the output of (3.6), (3.7) in the case where $u \equiv 0$ and $x_{H, 0}=0$,
it follows from (3.4) and (3.5) that the $Z$ transform of $z_{G}$ is given by

$$
\begin{aligned}
\hat{z}_{G}(\mathrm{z}) & =C_{H} \hat{x}_{H}(\mathrm{z})+D_{H} \hat{y}(\mathrm{z}) \\
& =\left(C_{H}\left(\mathrm{z} I-A_{H}\right)^{-1} B_{H}+D_{H}\right) \hat{y}(\mathrm{z}) \\
& =\left(C_{H}\left(\mathrm{z} I-A_{H}\right)^{-1} B_{H}+D_{H}\right) C_{G} \hat{x}_{G}(\mathrm{z}) \\
& =z\left(C_{H}\left(\mathrm{z} I-A_{H}\right)^{-1} B_{H}+D_{H}\right) C_{G}\left(\mathrm{z} I-A_{G}\right)^{-1} x_{G, 0} \\
& =\mathrm{z} K(\mathrm{z}) x_{G, 0}=\mathrm{z} \hat{w}_{G}(\mathrm{z}),
\end{aligned}
$$

where $\hat{w}_{G}(\mathrm{z}) \triangleq K(\mathrm{z}) x_{G, 0}$. Note that the inverse $Z$ transform $w_{G}$ of $\hat{w}_{G}$ is a linear combination of the $n_{G}$ single-channel impulse responses of $K$. Lemma 3.13 implies that $K$ is FIR and thus, for all $k \geq$ ind $K+1, w_{G, k}=0$. Since $z_{G, k}=w_{G, k+1}$, it follows that, for all $k \geq$ ind $K, z_{G, k}=0$. Hence, for all $k \geq \nu=\max \{$ ind $H$, ind $K, d\}, z_{k}=u_{k-d}$.

Finally, consider the case where $x_{H, 0}=0$. In this case, it follows that, for all $k \geq 0, z_{H, k}=0$, and thus, for all $k \geq 0, z_{k}=z_{\text {free }, \mathrm{k}}+z_{\text {forced }, \mathrm{k}}=z_{G, k}+z_{H, k}+z_{\text {forced }, \mathrm{k}}=z_{G, k}+z_{\text {forced,k }}$. Therefore, for all $k \geq \max \{$ ind $K, d\}, z_{k}=u_{k-d}$.

Theorem 3.14 shows that, for all $k \geq \max \{$ ind $H$, ind $K, d\}$, the output $z$ is equal to the input $u$ delayed by $d$ steps. However, if $\max \{\operatorname{ind} H$, ind $K\}>d$, then, for all $k=$ $0, \ldots, \max \{\operatorname{ind} H$, ind $K\}-d-1$, the input $u_{k}$ is not reconstructed. Note that Theorem 3.14 does not assume any stability condition, and thus the result holds even in the case where both $G$ and $H$ are unstable.

### 3.5 Existence of FIR Delayed Left Inverse

The following result restates part of Theorem 3.12 and provides its converse. In particular, Theorem 3.12 shows that a transfer function with full column normal rank has an FIR delayed left inverse with the minimal delay if and only if it has zero nonzero zeros. It follows from this fact and Theorem 3.14 that finite-time input estimation is possible if and only if the system has zero
nonzero zeros.

Theorem 3.15. Let $G \in \mathbb{R}(\mathrm{z})_{\text {prop }}^{p \times m}$, and assume that $G$ has full column normal rank. Then, for all $d \geq \eta_{G}$, there exists an FIR $H \in \mathbb{R}(\mathrm{z})_{\text {prop }}^{m \times p}$ such that $H$ is a delayed left inverse of $G$ with delay $d$ if and only if $G$ has zero nonzero zeros.

Proof. Sufficiency follows from Theorem 3.12. To prove necessity, suppose that $z_{0}$ is a nonzero zero of $G$. Since $H$ is FIR, it follows that $\mathrm{z}_{0}$ is not a pole of $H$. Note that $\operatorname{rank} H\left(\mathrm{z}_{0}\right) G\left(\mathrm{z}_{0}\right)=$ $\operatorname{rank} \mathrm{z}_{0}^{-d} I_{m}=m$. Since $\mathrm{z}_{0}$ is a nonzero zero of $G$, it follows that $\operatorname{rank} G\left(\mathrm{z}_{0}\right)<m$. Hence $\operatorname{rank} H\left(\mathrm{z}_{0}\right) G\left(\mathrm{z}_{0}\right) \leq \min \left\{\operatorname{rank} H\left(\mathrm{z}_{0}\right), \operatorname{rank} G\left(\mathrm{z}_{0}\right)\right\}<m$, which is a contradiction. Hence $G$ has zero nonzero zeros.

Consider the case where $G$ has at least one zero zero and zero nonzero zeros. With $\mathrm{z}_{0}=0$, it follows from Proposition 3.1 that, if $y \equiv 0$, then either $u$ is an impulse or $u \equiv 0$. Hence, the initial input $u_{0}$ cannot be reconstructed. However, the inability to reconstruct the initial input cannot be inferred from Theorem 3.14. As discussed at the end of this section, the following result strengthens Theorem 3.14 by implying that $u_{0}$ cannot be reconstructed in the case where $d=0$.

Proposition 3.16. Let $G \in \mathbb{R}(\mathrm{z})_{\text {prop }}^{p \times m}$ and $H \in \mathbb{R}(\mathrm{z})_{\text {prop }}^{m \times p}$ with minimal state space realizations (3.1)-(3.5). Assume that $H$ is an FIR left inverse of $G$, define $K(\mathrm{z}) \triangleq H(\mathrm{z}) C_{G}\left(\mathrm{z} I-A_{G}\right)^{-1}$, and assume that $G$ has at least one zero zero. Then $K \neq 0$.

Proof. Since $H G=I_{m}$, it follows that $D_{H} D_{G}=I_{m}$ and hence $\operatorname{rank} D_{H}=\operatorname{rank} D_{G}=m$. Thus there exists a nonsingular matrix $S \in \mathbb{R}^{p \times p}$ such that $\hat{D}_{H} \triangleq D_{H} S=\left[\begin{array}{ll}I_{m} & 0\end{array}\right]$. Define $n_{G} \triangleq \operatorname{Mcdeg} G$, and define $\hat{C}_{G} \triangleq S^{-1} C_{G}=\left[\begin{array}{l}\hat{C}_{1} \\ \hat{C}_{2}\end{array}\right]$, where $\hat{C}_{1} \in \mathbb{R}^{m \times n_{G}}$ and $\hat{C}_{G} \in \mathbb{R}^{(p-m) \times n_{G}}$. Similarly, define $\hat{D}_{G} \triangleq S^{-1} D_{G}=\left[\begin{array}{l}\hat{D}_{1} \\ \hat{D}_{2}\end{array}\right]$, where $\hat{D}_{1} \in \mathbb{R}^{m \times m}$ and $\hat{D}_{2} \in \mathbb{R}^{(p-m) \times m}$. Let $\hat{G} \in$ $\mathbb{R}(\mathrm{z})^{p \times m}$, where $\hat{G} \sim\left[\begin{array}{c|c}A_{G} & B_{G} \\ \hline \hat{C}_{G} & \hat{D}_{G}\end{array}\right]$. Let $\mathcal{O}$ and $\hat{\mathcal{O}}$ denote the observability matrices corresponding
to $\left(A_{G}, C_{G}\right)$ and $\left(A_{G}, \hat{C}_{G}\right)$, respectively. Note that

$$
\operatorname{rank} \hat{\mathcal{O}}=\operatorname{rank}\left[\begin{array}{c}
S^{-1} C_{G} \\
S^{-1} C_{G} A_{G} \\
\vdots \\
S^{-1} C_{G} A_{G}^{n_{G}-1}
\end{array}\right]=\operatorname{rank}\left(I_{n_{G}} \otimes S^{-1}\right) \mathcal{O}=\operatorname{rank} \mathcal{O}=n_{G}
$$

Thus $\hat{G} \stackrel{\min }{\sim}\left[\begin{array}{c|c}A_{G} & B_{G} \\ \hline \hat{C}_{G} & \hat{D}_{G}\end{array}\right]$. Note that

$$
\hat{D}_{1}=\left[\begin{array}{ll}
I_{m} & 0
\end{array}\right]\left[\begin{array}{l}
\hat{D}_{1}  \tag{3.20}\\
\hat{D}_{2}
\end{array}\right]=\hat{D}_{H} \hat{D}_{G}=D_{H} S S^{-1} D_{G}=I_{m}
$$

Now, suppose that $K=0$. Since $K(\mathrm{z})=H(\mathrm{z}) C_{G}\left(\mathrm{z} I-A_{G}\right)^{-1}=0$, it follows that $\left(C_{H}(\mathrm{z} I-\right.$ $\left.\left.A_{H}\right)^{-1} B_{H}+D_{H}\right) C_{G}=H(\mathrm{z}) C_{G}=0$. Letting $\mathrm{z} \rightarrow \infty$ implies that $D_{H} C_{G}=0$. Then

$$
\hat{C}_{1}=\left[\begin{array}{ll}
I_{m} & 0
\end{array}\right]\left[\begin{array}{l}
\hat{C}_{1}  \tag{3.21}\\
\hat{C}_{2}
\end{array}\right]=\hat{D}_{H} \hat{C}_{G}=D_{H} S S^{-1} C_{G}=0
$$

Let $\mathcal{Z}$ denote the Rosenbrock system matrix of the minimal realization (3.1) of $G$. Since $G$ has at least one zero zero, it follows that

$$
\begin{align*}
& n_{G}+m>\operatorname{rank} Z(0)=\operatorname{rank}\left[\begin{array}{cc}
-A_{G} & B_{G} \\
C_{G} & -D_{G}
\end{array}\right] \\
& =\operatorname{rank}\left[\begin{array}{cc}
I & 0 \\
0 & S^{-1}
\end{array}\right]\left[\begin{array}{cc}
-A_{G} & B_{G} \\
C_{G} & -D_{G}
\end{array}\right]=\operatorname{rank}\left[\begin{array}{cc}
-A_{G} & B_{G} \\
\hat{C}_{G} & -\hat{D}_{G}
\end{array}\right] . \tag{3.22}
\end{align*}
$$

It follows from (3.20)-(3.22) that

$$
n_{G}+m>\operatorname{rank}\left[\begin{array}{cc}
-A_{G} & B_{G}  \tag{3.23}\\
\hat{C}_{G} & -\hat{D}_{G}
\end{array}\right]=\operatorname{rank}\left[\begin{array}{cc}
-A_{G} & B_{G} \\
0 & -I_{m} \\
\hat{C}_{2} & -\hat{D}_{2}
\end{array}\right]=\operatorname{rank}\left[\begin{array}{cc}
-A_{G} & 0 \\
0 & I_{m} \\
\hat{C}_{2} & 0
\end{array}\right]
$$

Since $\left(A_{G}, \hat{C}_{G}\right)$ is observable, it follows from the PBH test that rank $\left[\begin{array}{c}-A_{G} \\ \hat{C}_{G}\end{array}\right]=n_{G}$. Hence $\operatorname{rank}\left[\begin{array}{cc}-A_{G} & 0 \\ 0 & I_{m} \\ \hat{C}_{2} & 0\end{array}\right]=n_{G}+m$, which contradicts (3.23). Therefore, $K \neq 0$.

In the case where $d=0$ and $G$ has at least one zero zero, Proposition 3.16 implies that ind $K \geq$ 1 and thus it follows from Theroem 3.14 that $u_{0}$ cannot be reconstructed.

### 3.6 Numerical Examples

Example 3.17. Let

$$
G(\mathrm{z})=\left[\begin{array}{c}
\frac{1}{\mathrm{z}^{2}}  \tag{3.24}\\
\frac{1}{\mathrm{z}+1}
\end{array}\right], \quad H(\mathrm{z})=\left[\begin{array}{cc}
\frac{\mathrm{z}}{} & 1 \\
\mathrm{z}+1 & \frac{\mathrm{z}^{2}}{}
\end{array}\right]
$$

so that $H(\mathrm{z}) G(\mathrm{z})=\mathrm{z}^{-2}$ and thus $H$ is a delayed left inverse of $G$ with delay 2. Figure 3.1 shows the input and output of (3.6), (3.7) with zero initial conditions and with nonzero initial conditions. Note that $H$, which is an IIR transfer function, fails to reconstruct the input in the case where the initial conditions are nonzero. Now, let

$$
H(\mathrm{z})=\left[\begin{array}{cc}
0 & \frac{\mathrm{z}+1}{\mathrm{z}} \tag{3.25}
\end{array}\right]
$$

so that $H(\mathrm{z}) G(\mathrm{z})=\mathrm{z}^{-1}$, and thus $H$ is a delayed left inverse of $G$ with delay 1. Figure 3.2 shows the input and output of (3.6), (3.7) with zero and nonzero initial conditions. Note that $H$, which is an FIR transfer function, correctly reconstructs the input in the case where the initial conditions are nonzero.


Figure 3.1: (a) shows the input and output of (3.6), (3.7) with zero initial conditions. (b) shows the input and output of (3.6), (3.7) with nonzero initial conditions.

Example 3.18. Let $G \in \mathbb{R}(\mathrm{z})_{\text {prop }}^{3 \times 2}$, where

$$
G(\mathrm{z})=\left[\begin{array}{cc}
\frac{\mathrm{z}}{\mathrm{z}+1} & \frac{1}{\mathrm{z}}  \tag{3.26}\\
\frac{\mathrm{z}}{\mathrm{z}+2} & 0 \\
\frac{\mathrm{z}}{\mathrm{z}+1} & 1
\end{array}\right]
$$



Figure 3.2: (a) shows the input and output of (3.6), (3.7) with zero initial conditions. (b) shows the input and output of (3.6), (3.7) with nonzero initial conditions.

Then

$$
S_{\infty}(\mathrm{z})=\left[\begin{array}{cc}
1 & 0 \\
0 & 1 \\
0 & 0
\end{array}\right], W(\mathrm{z})=\left[\begin{array}{ccc}
\frac{\mathrm{z}+2}{2 \mathrm{z}} & \frac{2(\mathrm{z}+1)}{\mathrm{z}^{2}} & \frac{2(2 \mathrm{z}+1)}{\mathrm{z}} \\
\frac{\mathrm{z}+1}{2 \mathrm{z}} & \frac{\mathrm{z}+1}{\mathrm{z}^{2}} & \frac{2 \mathrm{z}+1}{\mathrm{z}} \\
\mathrm{z}+2 & \mathrm{z}^{2}+\mathrm{z}+2 & 3 \mathrm{z}+2
\end{array}\right], V(\mathrm{z})=\left[\begin{array}{cc}
1 & -\frac{\mathrm{z}^{2}+3 z+2}{\mathrm{z}^{3}} \\
0 & 1
\end{array}\right],
$$

where $S_{\infty}$ is the Smith-McMillan form at infinity of $G$ and $G=W S_{\infty} V$. It follows from Propostion 3.10 that $\eta_{G}=0$. Evaluating the expression for $H_{\infty}$ given in Theorem 3.12 yields

$$
H_{\infty}(\mathrm{z})=\left[\begin{array}{ccc}
-\frac{2 \mathrm{z}^{3}+7 \mathrm{z}^{2}+7 \mathrm{z}+2}{2 \mathrm{z}^{3}} & \frac{4 \mathrm{z}^{4}+11 \mathrm{z}^{3}+3 \mathrm{z}^{2}-8 \mathrm{z}-4}{2 \mathrm{z}^{4}} & \frac{2 \mathrm{z}^{3}+7 \mathrm{z}^{2}+7 \mathrm{z}+2}{2 z^{4}}  \tag{3.28}\\
-\frac{\mathrm{z}+2}{2} & -\frac{2 \mathrm{z}+1}{2 \mathrm{z}} & \frac{2 \mathrm{z}}{2 \mathrm{z}}
\end{array}\right]
$$

which satisfies $H_{\infty}(\mathrm{z}) G(\mathrm{z})=I_{2}$. Hence, $H_{\infty}$ is an FIR left inverse of $G$. Constructing minimal realizations of $H_{\infty}$ and $K$ shows that ind $H_{\infty}=$ ind $K=4$, where $K$ is defined in Theorem 3.14 with $H$ replaced by $H_{\infty}$. Theorem 3.14 thus implies that $\nu=\max \left\{\right.$ ind $H_{\infty}$, ind $\left.K, d\right\}=4$ and hence, for all $k \geq 4, z_{k}=u_{k}$, where $u$ and $z$ are defined in (3.6), (3.7). Figure 3.3 shows the input and output of (3.6), (3.7) with nonzero initial conditions. Note that, in this example, $G$ is unstable and has a zero at zero.


Figure 3.3: Input and output of (3.6), (3.7), where $u=\left[\begin{array}{ll}u_{1} & u_{2}\end{array}\right]^{\mathrm{T}}$ and $z=\left[z_{1} z_{2}\right]^{\mathrm{T}}$. Note that, for all $k \geq 4, z_{1, k}=u_{1, k}$, and, for all $k \geq 1, z_{2, k}=u_{2, k}$. Hence, for all $k \geq 4, z_{k}=u_{k}$.

### 3.7 An Application of Finite-Time Input Estimation

Many tall systems, that is, systems with number of outputs greater than the number of inputs have no transmission zeros. Exact input estimation can be done for such systems. Consider the mass-spring system shown in Figure 3.4. The dynamics of this system are given by


Figure 3.4: Mass-spring system

$$
\begin{align*}
& m_{1} \ddot{y_{1}}=-k_{1} y_{1}-k_{2}\left(y_{1}-y_{2}\right)+u  \tag{3.29}\\
& m_{2} \ddot{y_{2}}=-k_{2}\left(y_{2}-y_{1}\right) \tag{3.30}
\end{align*}
$$

where $m_{1}$ and $m_{2}$ are the masses in kilograms, $k_{1}$ and $k_{2}$ are spring constants in Newton/meters, $y_{1}$ and $y_{2}$ are position of the masses $m_{1}$ and $m_{2}$ in meters, and $u$ is the force in Newtons. Assume that $u$ is unknown and let $m_{1}=m_{2}=1 \mathrm{~kg}$ and $k_{1}=k_{2}=1 \mathrm{~N} / \mathrm{m}$. Assume that the output measurement is $y=\left[\begin{array}{l}\dot{y_{1}} \\ y_{2}\end{array}\right]$. Then the transfer function from $u$ to $y$ is given by

$$
G(s)=\left[\begin{array}{c}
\frac{s^{3}+s}{s^{4}+3 s^{2}+1}  \tag{3.31}\\
\frac{1}{s^{4}+3 s^{2}+1}
\end{array}\right]
$$

Discretization of (3.31) using zero-order hold yields the discrete-time transfer function given by

$$
G_{\mathrm{d}}(z)=\left[\begin{array}{c}
\frac{0.09967 \mathrm{z}^{3}-0.298 \mathrm{z}^{2}+0.298 \mathrm{z}-0.09967}{\mathrm{z}^{4}-3.97 \mathrm{z}^{3}+5.94 \mathrm{z}^{2}-3.97 \mathrm{z}+1}  \tag{3.32}\\
\frac{4.163 \times 10^{-6} \mathrm{z}^{3}+4.571 \times 10^{-5} \mathrm{z}^{2}+4.571 \times 10^{-5} \mathrm{z}+4.163 \times 10^{-6}}{\mathrm{z}^{4}-3.97 \mathrm{z}^{3}+5.94 \mathrm{z}^{2}-3.97 \mathrm{z}+1}
\end{array}\right] .
$$

Note that $G_{\mathrm{d}}$ has no transmission zeros. The minimal delay for which a delayed left inverse exists for $G_{\mathrm{d}}$ is $\eta_{G_{\mathrm{d}}}=1$. Using the construction of FIR delayed inverse given in Section 3.3 yields

$$
H(z)=\left[\begin{array}{c}
\frac{8.295 z^{6}-25.2 z^{5}+19.26 z^{4}+10.25 z^{3}-18.27 z^{2}+4.964 z+0.6982}{z^{6}}  \tag{3.33}\\
\frac{4.161 \times 10^{4} z^{6}-1.7 \times 10^{5} z^{5}+3.079 \times 10^{5} z^{4}-3.591 \times 10^{5} z^{3}+3.079 \times 10^{5} z^{2}-1.7 \times 10^{5} z+4.161 \times 10^{4}}{z^{6}}
\end{array}\right]^{\mathrm{T}} .
$$

Note that $H G=1 / \mathrm{z}$ and hence $H$ is a delayed left inverse of $G$ with the minimal delay 1. Figure 3.5 compares the actual input $u$ applied to the system with the output of the cascade of $G$ and $H$. The input is exactly reconstructed after a finite number of steps. Figure 3.6 is a zoomed view of 3.5 and shows that the input is estimated with a delay of 1 .


Figure 3.5: Input estimation for the mass-spring system shown in Figure 3.4. $u$ is the actual input and $z$ is the estimated input.


Figure 3.6: Zoomed view of Figure 3.5

## CHAPTER 4

## Transmission Zeros and Infinite Zeros

Transmission zeros can be counted by using the Smith-McMillan form, pole/zero modules, or the dimension of the largest output nulling invariant subspace. In this chapter, an alternative approach is provided by showing that the number of transmission zeros of a MIMO transfer function is given in terms of the defect of an augmented matrix involving an observability matrix and the Markov block-Toeplitz matrix. It is also shown that the number of infinite zeros is related to the defect of the Markov block-Toeplitz matrix. These results are illustrated with a numerical example.

Let $G \in \mathbb{R}(\mathrm{z})_{\text {prop }}^{p \times m}$, where $p \geq m, G \stackrel{\min }{\sim}\left[\begin{array}{l|l}A & B \\ \hline C & D\end{array}\right]$, and $A \in \mathbb{R}^{n \times n}$. Consider (3.10) and (3.11). For all $l \geq 0$, define the $l^{\text {th }}$ Markov parameter

$$
H_{l} \triangleq\left\{\begin{array}{cl}
D, & l=0 \\
C A^{l-1} B, & l \geq 1
\end{array}\right.
$$

For all $l \geq 0$, define

$$
y_{l} \triangleq\left[\begin{array}{c}
y_{0} \\
y_{1} \\
\vdots \\
y_{l}
\end{array}\right] \in \mathbb{R}^{(l+1) p}, \quad \mathcal{u}_{l} \triangleq\left[\begin{array}{c}
u_{0} \\
u_{1} \\
\vdots \\
u_{l}
\end{array}\right] \in \mathbb{R}^{(l+1) m}, \quad \Gamma_{l} \triangleq\left[\begin{array}{c}
C \\
C A \\
\vdots \\
C A^{l}
\end{array}\right] \mathbb{R}^{(l+1) p \times n} .
$$

$\Gamma_{l}$ is the $l$ th observability matrix. It follows from (3.10), (3.11) that, for all $l \geq 0$,

$$
y_{l}=\Gamma_{l} x_{0}+\mathfrak{T}_{l} \mathcal{U}_{l}=\Psi_{l}\left[\begin{array}{l}
x_{0}  \tag{4.1}\\
\mathcal{U}_{l}
\end{array}\right]
$$

where

$$
\Psi_{l} \triangleq\left[\begin{array}{ll}
\Gamma_{l} & \mathcal{T}_{l}
\end{array}\right] \in \mathbb{R}^{(l+1) p \times[n+(l+1) m]}
$$

and $\mathcal{T}_{l}$ is the $l$ th Markov block-Toeplitz matrix associated with $G$. For all $l \geq 0$, define

$$
Q_{l} \triangleq\left[\begin{array}{c}
H_{0} \\
H_{1} \\
\vdots \\
H_{l}
\end{array}\right] \in \mathbb{R}^{(l+1) p \times m}, \quad P_{l} \triangleq\left[\begin{array}{c}
0 \\
\mathcal{T}_{l-1}
\end{array}\right] \in \mathbb{R}^{(l+1) p \times l m}
$$

so that $\mathcal{T}_{l}=\left[\begin{array}{ll}Q_{l} & P_{l}\end{array}\right]$. Let $\zeta$ denote the number of transmission zeros of $G$ counting multiplicity.
We assume for the rest of the chapter that $G$ has full column normal rank, that is, $\operatorname{rank} G=m$. This assumption implies that $G$ is square or tall, that is, $p \geq m$. However, since $G$ and $G^{\mathrm{T}}$ have the same poles and zeros, the results in this chapter can be used in the case where $G$ has full row rank, that is, $\operatorname{rank} G=p$. In this case, $G$ is square or wide, that is, $m \geq p$.

### 4.1 Counting Transmission Zeros

In this section, we relate the number of transmission zeros of $G$ to the defect of an augmented matrix involving an observability matrix and the Markov block-Toeplitz matrix. The concept of output nulling invariant subspaces [118] acts as a bridge in establishing this relationship. The main result is Theorem 4.3, which provides an expression for the number of transmission zeros.

The following result is given by Theorem 11 in [119].

Proposition 4.1. Let $V^{*}$ be the maximal output-nulling invariant subspace of a minimal realization of $G$. Then, $\operatorname{dim} V^{*}=\zeta$.

Lemma 4.2. Let $V^{*}$ be the maximal output-nulling invariant subspace of (3.10), (3.11), and let $x_{0} \in V^{*}$. Then there exists an input sequence $\left(u_{k}\right)_{k \geq 0}$ such that, for all $k \geq 0, y_{k}=0$.

Proof. Since $x_{0} \in V^{*}$, it follows from (2.2) that there exists $u_{0} \in \mathbb{R}^{m}$ such that

$$
\begin{aligned}
x_{1} & =A x_{0}+B u_{0}, \\
0 & =C x_{0}+D u_{0},
\end{aligned}
$$

where $x_{1} \in V^{*}$. Since $x_{1} \in V^{*}$, it follows from (2.2) that there exists $u_{1} \in \mathbb{R}^{m}$ such that

$$
\begin{aligned}
x_{2} & =A x_{1}+B u_{1}, \\
0 & =C x_{1}+D u_{1},
\end{aligned}
$$

where $x_{2} \in V^{*}$. By induction, it follows that there exists an input sequence $\left(u_{k}\right)_{k \geq 0}$ such that, for all $k \geq 0, y_{k}=0$.

The following result characterizes the number of transmission zeros in terms of the defect of the Markov block-Toeplitz matrix given by Definition 2.1 and the defect of a matrix consisting of an observability matrix and the Markov block-Toeplitz matrix.

Theorem 4.3. For all $l \geq n-1$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{def} \Psi_{l}-\operatorname{def} \mathcal{T}_{l}=\operatorname{dim}\left(\mathcal{R}\left(\Gamma_{l}\right) \cap \mathcal{R}\left(\mathcal{T}_{l}\right)\right)=\zeta . \tag{4.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. It follows from Fact 3.14.15 in [116] that, for all $l \geq 0$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{def} \Psi_{l}=\operatorname{def} \Gamma_{l}+\operatorname{def} \mathcal{T}_{l}+\operatorname{dim}\left(\mathcal{R}\left(\Gamma_{l}\right) \cap \mathcal{R}\left(\mathcal{T}_{l}\right)\right) \tag{4.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

Note that, for all $l \geq n-1$, def $\Gamma_{l}=0$. Hence (4.3) implies that, for all $l \geq n-1$,

$$
\operatorname{def} \Psi_{l}-\operatorname{def} \mathfrak{T}_{l}=\operatorname{dim}\left(\mathcal{R}\left(\Gamma_{l}\right) \cap \mathcal{R}\left(\mathcal{T}_{l}\right)\right)
$$

Next, let $V^{*}$ be the maximal output-nulling invariant subspace of (3.10), (3.11). Then Proposition 4.1 implies that $\operatorname{dim} V^{*}=\zeta$. Let $x_{1,0}, x_{2,0}, \ldots, x_{\zeta, 0}$ be a basis for $V^{*}$. It follows from Lemma 4.2 that, for all $l \geq n-1$ and $i=1, \ldots, \zeta$, there exists $\mathcal{U}_{l, i} \in \mathbb{R}^{(l+1) m}$ such that, when substituted for $\mathcal{U}_{l}$ in (4.1), yields $y_{l}=0$. Thus, for all $l \geq n-1$ and $i=1, \ldots, \zeta$, it follows that

$$
\Gamma_{l} x_{i, 0}+\mathcal{T}_{l} \mathcal{U}_{l, i}=0
$$

For all $l \geq n-1$ and $i=1, \ldots, \zeta$, define $z_{l, i} \triangleq \Gamma_{l} x_{i, 0}=-\mathcal{T}_{l} \mathcal{U}_{l, i}$. For all $l \geq n-1$, let $\alpha_{l, 1}, \ldots, \alpha_{l, \zeta}$ be real numbers such that $\sum_{i=1}^{\zeta} \alpha_{l, i} z_{l, i}=0$. Then, for all $l \geq n-1$,

$$
0=\sum_{i=1}^{\zeta} \alpha_{l, i} z_{l, i}=\sum_{i=1}^{\zeta} \alpha_{l, i} \Gamma_{l} x_{i, 0}=\Gamma_{l} \sum_{i=1}^{\zeta} \alpha_{l, i} x_{i, 0}
$$

Since, for all $l \geq n-1, \Gamma_{l}$ has full column rank, it follows that $\sum_{i=1}^{\zeta} \alpha_{l, i} x_{i, 0}=0$ and thus $\alpha_{l, i}=0$. Hence, for all $l \geq n-1, z_{l, 1}, \ldots, z_{l, \zeta}$ are linearly independent. Now, for all $l \geq n-1$, define $z_{l} \triangleq \Gamma_{l} x_{0}$, where $x_{0} \triangleq \sum_{i=1}^{\zeta} \beta_{i} x_{i, 0}$. It follows that, for all $l \geq n-1$,

$$
z_{l}=\Gamma_{l} \sum_{i=1}^{\zeta} \beta_{i} x_{i, 0}=\sum_{i=1}^{\zeta} \beta_{i} \Gamma_{l} x_{i, 0}=\sum_{i=1}^{\zeta} \beta_{i} z_{l, i} .
$$

Thus, for all $l \geq n-1, \operatorname{span}\left\{z_{l, 1}, \ldots, z_{l, \zeta}\right\}=\mathcal{R}\left(\Gamma_{l}\right) \cap \mathcal{R}\left(\mathcal{T}_{l}\right)$, and hence $\operatorname{dim}\left(\mathcal{R}\left(\Gamma_{l}\right) \cap \mathcal{R}\left(\mathcal{T}_{l}\right)\right)=\zeta$.

### 4.2 Counting Infinite Zeros

Infinite zeros extend the notion of relative degree to MIMO systems; in fact, for a SISO system, the number of infinite zeros is the relative degree of the transfer function. The main result in this section, Theorem 4.6, establishes a relationship between the number of infinite zeros and the defect of the Markov block-Toeplitz matrix. All of the definitions and results given below support the main result.

Proposition 4.4. $\eta_{G}$ is finite.

Proof. Note that, since $G$ has full column rank, $\left[G(\mathrm{z})^{\mathrm{T}} G(\mathrm{z})\right]^{-1} G(\mathrm{z})^{\mathrm{T}}$ is a left inverse of $G$ and thus there exists $d \geq 0$ such that $H(\mathrm{z})=\mathrm{z}^{-d}\left[G(\mathrm{z})^{\mathrm{T}} G(\mathrm{z})\right]^{-1} G(\mathrm{z})^{\mathrm{T}}$ is a delayed left inverse of $G$ with delay $d$. Hence $G$ is delayed left invertible with delay $d$. Then Proposition 3.10 implies that $\operatorname{rank} \mathcal{T}_{d}-\operatorname{rank} \mathcal{T}_{d-1}=m$ and hence $\eta_{G}$ is finite.

Lemma 4.5. Let $l_{0} \geq 0$. The following statements are equivalent:
i) $\operatorname{rank} \mathcal{T}_{l_{0}}-\operatorname{rank} \mathcal{T}_{l_{0}-1}=m$.
ii) $\operatorname{rank} Q_{l_{0}}=m$ and $\operatorname{dim}\left(\mathcal{R}\left(Q_{l_{0}}\right) \cap \mathcal{R}\left(P_{l_{0}}\right)\right)=0$.
iii) For all $l \geq l_{0}, \operatorname{rank} \mathcal{T}_{l}-\operatorname{rank} \mathcal{T}_{l-1}=m$.

Proof. To prove $i) \Longrightarrow i i$, note that it follows from Fact 3.14.15 in [116, p. 322] that $m=$ $\operatorname{rank} \mathcal{T}_{l_{0}}-\operatorname{rank} \mathcal{T}_{l_{0}-1}=\operatorname{rank} Q_{l_{0}}-\operatorname{dim}\left(\mathcal{R}\left(Q_{l_{0}}\right) \cap \mathcal{R}\left(P_{l_{0}}\right)\right)$. Thus, $m+\operatorname{dim}\left(\mathcal{R}\left(Q_{l_{0}}\right) \cap \mathcal{R}\left(P_{l_{0}}\right)\right)=$ $\operatorname{rank} Q_{l_{0}} \leq m$. Hence, $\operatorname{rank} Q_{l_{0}}=m$, and $\operatorname{dim}\left(\mathcal{R}\left(Q_{l_{0}}\right) \cap \mathcal{R}\left(P_{l_{0}}\right)\right)=0$.

To prove $i i) \Longrightarrow i i i$, note that, for all $l \geq 0$,

$$
Q_{l+1}=\left[\begin{array}{c}
Q_{l} \\
H_{l+1}
\end{array}\right], \quad P_{l+1}=\left[ H_{0}\right] .
$$

Furthermore, for all $l \geq l_{0}$, $\operatorname{rank} Q_{l+1}=\operatorname{rank} Q_{l_{0}}=m$. Since $\operatorname{rank} Q_{l_{0}}=m$ and $\operatorname{dim}\left(\mathcal{R}\left(Q_{l_{0}}\right) \cap\right.$ $\left.\mathcal{R}\left(P_{l_{0}}\right)\right)=0$, it follows from Lemma A in [34] that $\operatorname{dim}\left(\mathcal{R}\left(Q_{l_{0}+1}\right) \cap \mathcal{R}\left(P_{l_{0}+1}\right)\right)=0$. By induction,
it thus follows that, for all $l \geq l_{0}, \operatorname{dim}\left(\mathcal{R}\left(Q_{l}\right) \cap \mathcal{R}\left(P_{l}\right)\right)=0$. Thus, for all $l \geq l_{0}$, Fact 3.14.15 in [116, p. 322] implies that $\operatorname{rank} \mathcal{T}_{l}-\operatorname{rank} \mathcal{T}_{l-1}=\operatorname{rank} Q_{l}-\operatorname{dim}\left(\mathcal{R}\left(Q_{l}\right) \cap \mathcal{R}\left(P_{l}\right)\right)=m$.

The proof of $i i i) \Longrightarrow i$ is immediate.

The following result characterizes the number of infinite zeros in terms of the defect of the Markov block-Toeplitz matrix.

Theorem 4.6. For all $l \geq \eta_{G}-1$, $\operatorname{def} \mathcal{T}_{l}=\iota$.

Proof. Note that it follows from Proposition 4.4 that $\eta_{G}$ is finite. Next, Fact 3.14 .15 in [116, p. 322] implies that, for all $l \geq 0$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{def} \mathfrak{T}_{l}=\operatorname{def} Q_{l}+\operatorname{def} P_{l}+\operatorname{dim}\left(\mathcal{R}\left(Q_{l}\right) \cap \mathcal{R}\left(P_{l}\right)\right) \tag{4.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

For all $l \geq \eta_{G}$, Lemma 4.5 implies that $\operatorname{rank} Q_{l}=m$, and $\operatorname{dim}\left(\mathcal{R}\left(Q_{l}\right) \cap \mathcal{R}\left(P_{l}\right)\right)=0$. Therefore, it follows from (4.4) that, for all $l \geq \eta_{G}$, $\operatorname{def} \mathcal{T}_{l}=\operatorname{def} P_{l}=\operatorname{def}\left[\begin{array}{c}0 \\ \mathcal{T}_{l-1}\end{array}\right]=\operatorname{def} \mathcal{T}_{l-1}$. Hence, for all $l \geq \eta_{G}, \operatorname{def} \mathcal{T}_{l}=\operatorname{def} \mathcal{T}_{\eta_{G}-1}$.

Next, let $S_{\infty}$ be the Smith-McMillan form at infinity of $G$, and let $\iota_{1}, \ldots, \iota_{\rho_{0}}$ be as defined in Theorem 3.8. Let $H_{\infty, j}$ be the $j$ th Markov parameter of $S_{\infty}$. It follows from Proposition 3.11 that $\eta_{G}=\iota_{1}$, and hence

$$
\begin{equation*}
\iota=\sum_{j=1}^{\rho_{0}} \iota_{j}=\sum_{j=1}^{\iota_{1}} j \operatorname{rank} H_{\infty, j}=\sum_{j=1}^{\eta_{G}} j \operatorname{rank} H_{\infty, j} . \tag{4.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

Since $G$ has full column normal rank, it follows that

$$
\begin{equation*}
m=\sum_{j=0}^{\eta_{G}} \operatorname{rank} H_{\infty, j} \tag{4.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

Let $\mathcal{T}_{\infty, i}$ be the $i$ th Markov block-Toeplitz matrix associated with $S_{\infty}$. Note that, for all $i \geq 0$, each row of $\mathcal{T}_{\infty, i}$ is either zero or has exactly one nonzero entry that is equal to one, and the nonzero
rows of $\mathcal{T}_{\infty, i}$ are linearly independent. It thus follows that, for all $i \geq 0$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{rank} \mathcal{T}_{\infty, i}=\sum_{j=0}^{i}(i-j+1) \operatorname{rank} H_{\infty, j} \tag{4.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

Hence (4.5), (4.6), and (4.7) imply that

$$
\begin{aligned}
\operatorname{def} \mathcal{T}_{\infty, \eta_{G}-1} & =\eta_{G} m-\sum_{j=0}^{\eta_{G}-1}\left(\eta_{G}-j\right) \operatorname{rank} H_{\infty, j} \\
& =\eta_{G}\left(m-\operatorname{rank} H_{\infty, 0}\right)-\eta_{G} \sum_{j=1}^{\eta_{G}-1} \operatorname{rank} H_{\infty, j}+\sum_{j=1}^{\eta_{G}-1} j \operatorname{rank} H_{\infty, j} \\
& =\eta_{G}\left(m-\operatorname{rank} H_{\infty, 0}\right)-\eta_{G}\left(m-\operatorname{rank} H_{\infty, 0}-\operatorname{rank} H_{\infty, \eta_{G}}\right)+\sum_{j=1}^{\eta_{G}-1} j \operatorname{rank} H_{\infty, j} \\
& =\sum_{j=1}^{\eta_{G}} j \operatorname{rank} H_{\infty, j}=\iota
\end{aligned}
$$

Next, since $\mathcal{T}_{-1}$ is an empty matrix, it follows from Lemma 3.9 and Theorem 3.8 that, for all $l \geq 0$, $\operatorname{rank} \mathcal{T}_{l}=\operatorname{rank} \mathcal{T}_{\infty, l}$. Hence, $\operatorname{def} \mathcal{T}_{\eta_{G}-1}=\operatorname{def} \mathcal{T}_{\infty, \eta_{G}-1}=\iota$.

### 4.3 Numerical Example

Example 4.7. Let

$$
G=\left[\begin{array}{cc}
\frac{1}{\mathrm{z}+1} & 1  \tag{4.8}\\
\frac{1}{\mathrm{z}+3} & \frac{1}{2 \mathrm{z}} \\
\frac{1}{2 \mathrm{z}} & 1
\end{array}\right]
$$

Numerical computation using Matlab yields
i) $n=4, \eta_{G}=1$.
ii) $\operatorname{def} \mathcal{T}_{0}=1$.
iii) def $\Psi_{0}=3$, and def $\Psi_{l}=2$, for $l=1,2,3$.

Theorem 4.6 thus implies that, for all $l \geq 0$, def $\mathcal{T}_{l}=1$, and thus $\iota=1$. Similarly, Theorem 4.3 implies that, for all $l \geq 3$, def $\Psi_{l}=2$, and thus $\zeta=1$.

As a check, the numbers of infinite and transmission zeros are calculated from the SmithMcMillan form at infinity and the Smith-McMillan form, respectively, as follows. Note that $G=W S_{\infty} V$, where

$$
\begin{align*}
& S_{\infty}(\mathrm{z})=\left[\begin{array}{cc}
1 & \\
\bar{z} & 0 \\
0 & 1 \\
0 & 0
\end{array}\right], \quad V(\mathrm{z})=\left[\begin{array}{cc}
\frac{1-z}{\mathrm{z}} & \frac{(\mathrm{z}-1)\left(5 z^{2}-6 z-9\right)}{4 z^{3}} \\
-\frac{6 z}{z^{2}+4 z+3} & \frac{6 z-9}{2 z}
\end{array}\right],  \tag{4.9}\\
& W(\mathrm{z})=\left[\begin{array}{ccc}
\begin{array}{c}
-\frac{6 z+9}{2 z}
\end{array} & \frac{4 z^{4}+21 z^{3}+21 z^{2}-27 z-27}{12 z^{4}} \\
-\frac{2 z+3}{2 z} & \frac{7 z^{3}+7 z^{2}-9 z-9}{12 z^{4}} & 1 \\
-\frac{10 z^{2}+15 z+9}{4 z^{2}} & \frac{8 z^{5}+37 z^{4}+38 z^{3}-18 z^{2}-54 z-27}{24 z^{5}} & \frac{z+1}{2 z}
\end{array}\right] . \tag{4.10}
\end{align*}
$$

It can be seen from $S_{\infty}$ that $\iota=1$. Next, note that $G=S_{1} S S_{2}$, where

$$
\begin{align*}
& S(z)=\left[\begin{array}{cc}
\frac{1}{z(z+1)(z+3)} & 0 \\
0 & \frac{z-1}{z} \\
0 & 0
\end{array}\right], \quad S_{2}(z)=\left[\begin{array}{cc}
1 & \frac{2 z^{3}+9 z^{2}+10 z+3}{12} \\
0 & 1
\end{array}\right],  \tag{4.11}\\
& S_{1}(z)=\left[\begin{array}{ccc}
z(z+3) & -\frac{z(2 z+9)}{12} & -\frac{z+6}{6} \\
z(z+1) & -\frac{2 z^{2}+5 z+6}{12} & -\frac{z+4}{6} \\
\frac{z^{2}+4 z+3}{2} & \frac{-2 z^{2}-11 z+3}{24} & -\frac{z+7}{12}
\end{array}\right] . \tag{4.12}
\end{align*}
$$

It can be seen from $S$ that $\zeta=1$.

## CHAPTER 5

## Zero Dynamics of Input-Output Models

Zeros are of extreme importance in linear systems theory, especially unstable zeros, which degrade achievable performance. Furthermore, the presence of a zero in a state space model implies the existence of an initial condition and a nonzero input signal such that the output is identically zero; this property is called output zeroing. The purpose of this chapter is to elucidate the properties of the zero dynamics within the context of input-output models, which, like state space models, are time-domain models, but, unlike state space models, have no internal state. In particular, the focus is on the zero dynamics of left polynomial fraction description (LPFD) input-output models whose denominator polynomial is not necessarily monic. In addition, output zeroing in input-output models is considered, and its equivalence to output zeroing in state space models is discussed. Finally, a numerical example is presented to illustrate the results.

### 5.1 Preliminary Results

In this and all subsequent sections, let $G \in \mathbb{R}(\mathrm{z})_{\text {prop }}^{p \times m}$. In the notation of Theorem 3.2, define

$$
D_{\mathrm{S}} \triangleq\left[\begin{array}{cccc}
q_{1} & & & 0  \tag{5.1}\\
& \ddots & & \\
& & q_{\rho} & \\
0 & & & I_{p-\rho}
\end{array}\right] S_{1}^{-1}, \quad N_{\mathrm{S}} \triangleq\left[\begin{array}{cccc}
p_{1} & & & 0 \\
& \ddots & \\
& & p_{\rho} & \\
0 & & & 0_{(p-\rho) \times(m-\rho)}
\end{array}\right] S_{2} .
$$

Proposition 5.1. $\left(D_{\mathrm{S}}, N_{\mathrm{S}}\right)$ is a CLPFD of $G$.
Proof. Note that, for all $\mathrm{z} \in \mathbb{C}, \operatorname{rank}\left[D_{\mathrm{S}}(\mathrm{z}) N_{\mathrm{S}}(\mathrm{z})\right]=p$, and hence it follows from Theorem 16.16 in [120, p. 300] that $D_{\mathrm{S}}$ and $N_{\mathrm{S}}$ are coprime.

The following result is given by Theorem 16.17 in [120, p. 301].
Proposition 5.2. Let $(D, N)$ be a CLPFD of $G$ and $(\hat{D}, \hat{N})$ be an LPFD of $G$. Then $(\hat{D}, \hat{N})$ is a CLPFD of $G$ if and only if there exists a unimodular matrix $U \in \mathbb{R}[\mathrm{z}]^{p \times p}$ such that $\hat{D}=U D$ and $\hat{N}=U N$.

Corollary 5.3. Let $(D, N)$ be an LPFD of $G$. Then $(D, N)$ is a CLPFD of $G$ if and only if there exists a unimodular matrix $U \in \mathbb{R}[\mathrm{z}]^{p \times p}$ such that $D=U D_{\mathrm{S}}$ and $N=U N_{\mathrm{S}}$.

Note that it follows from [121, p. 35] that, for all $P \in \mathbb{R}[\mathrm{z}]^{p \times n}$ and $Q \in \mathbb{R}[\mathrm{z}]^{p \times m}$, there exists a greatest common left divisor of $P$ and $Q$.

Lemma 5.4. Let $(D, N)$ be a CLPFD of $G$, and let $(\hat{D}, \hat{N})$ be an LPFD of $G$. Then there exists a nonsingular $L \in \mathbb{R}[z]^{p \times p}$ such that $\hat{D}=L D$ and $\hat{N}=L N$.

Proof. Let $R \in \mathbb{R}[\mathrm{z}]^{p \times p}$ be a greatest common left divisor of $\hat{D}$ and $\hat{N}$. Then there exist $\bar{D} \in$ $\mathbb{R}[\mathrm{z}]^{p \times p}$ and $\bar{N} \in \mathbb{R}[\mathrm{z}]^{p \times m}$ such that $\hat{D}=R \bar{D}, \hat{N}=R \bar{N}$, and $\bar{D}$ and $\bar{N}$ are coprime. Next, it follows from Proposition 5.2 that there exists a unimodular matrix $U \in \mathbb{R}[z]^{p \times p}$ such that $\bar{D}=U D$ and $\bar{N}=U N$. Hence, $\hat{D}=L D$ and $\hat{N}=L N$, where $L \triangleq R U$. Since $\hat{D}$ is nonsingular, it follows that $R$ is nonsingular and thus $L$ is nonsingular.

Proposition 5.5. Let $(D, N)$ be an LPFD of $G$. Then $\operatorname{deg} \operatorname{det} D=\operatorname{McDeg} G$ if and only if $(D, N)$ is a CLPFD of $G$.

Proof. To prove sufficiency, note that Corollary 5.3 implies that there exists a unimodular matrix $U \in \mathbb{R}[z]^{p \times p}$ such that $D=U D_{\mathrm{S}}$. Hence, $\operatorname{deg} \operatorname{det} D=\operatorname{deg} \operatorname{det} U+\operatorname{deg} \operatorname{det} D_{\mathrm{S}}=\operatorname{deg} \operatorname{det} D_{\mathrm{S}}=$ $\operatorname{McDeg} G$. To prove necessity, note that it follows from Lemma 5.4 and Proposition 5.1 that there exists a nonsingular $L \in \mathbb{R}[z]^{p \times p}$ such that $D=L D_{\mathrm{S}}$ and $N=L N_{\mathrm{S}}$. Hence $\operatorname{deg} \operatorname{det} L=$ $\operatorname{deg} \operatorname{det} D-\operatorname{deg} \operatorname{det} D_{\mathrm{S}}=\operatorname{McDeg} G-\operatorname{McDeg} G=0$. Thus, $L$ is unimodular and therefore Corollary 5.3 implies that $(D, N)$ is a CLPFD of $G$.

### 5.2 Results on Zero Dynamics of Input-Output Models

This section discusses various aspects of the zero dynamics of input-output models. In particular, Proposition 5.6 characterizes transmission zeros of $G$ using an LPFD of $G$ and a CLPFD of $G$. Next, Proposition 5.7 gives an expression for counting the number of transmission zeros of $G$ using a CLPFD of $G$. Necessary and sufficient conditions for the existence of nonzero solutions to the zero dynamics of $G$ are given in Proposition 5.8, and solutions of the zero dynamics are characterized by Proposition 5.9. Next, Theorem 5.10 relates nonzero solutions of the zero dynamics to the transmission zeros of $G$.

Proposition 5.6. Let $(D, N)$ be an LPFD of $G$, and let $\mathrm{z}_{0}$ be a transmission zero of $G$. Then $\operatorname{rank} N\left(\mathrm{z}_{0}\right)<\operatorname{rank} N$. Now assume that $(D, N)$ is a CLPFD of $G$. Then $\mathrm{z}_{0}$ is a transmission zero of $G$ if and only if $\operatorname{rank} N\left(\mathrm{z}_{0}\right)<\operatorname{rank} N$.

Proof. To prove the first statement, note that Proposition 5.1 and Lemma 5.4 imply that there exists a nonsingular $L \in \mathbb{R}[\mathrm{z}]^{p \times p}$ such that $D=L D_{\mathrm{S}}$ and $N=L N_{\mathrm{S}}$, where $D_{\mathrm{S}}$ and $N_{\mathrm{S}}$ are defined in (5.1). Since $\mathrm{z}_{0}$ is a transmission zero of $G$, it follows from Theorem 3.2 that rank $N_{\mathrm{S}}\left(\mathrm{z}_{0}\right)<$ $\operatorname{rank} N_{\mathrm{S}}$. Hence, $\operatorname{rank} N\left(\mathrm{z}_{0}\right) \leq \operatorname{rank} N_{\mathrm{S}}\left(\mathrm{z}_{0}\right)<\operatorname{rank} N_{\mathrm{S}}=\operatorname{rank} N$. To prove sufficiency in the second statement, note that Corollary 5.3 implies that, for all $\mathrm{z} \in \mathbb{C}$, $\operatorname{rank} N(\mathrm{z})=\operatorname{rank} N_{\mathrm{S}}(\mathrm{z})$. Hence, $\operatorname{rank} N_{\mathrm{S}}\left(\mathrm{z}_{0}\right)=\operatorname{rank} N\left(\mathrm{z}_{0}\right)<\operatorname{rank} N=\operatorname{rank} N_{\mathrm{S}}$, and thus it follows from Theorem 3.2 that $\mathrm{z}_{0}$ is a transmission zero of $G$.

Proposition 5.7. Let $(D, N)$ be a CLPFD of $G$, let $(\hat{D}, \hat{N})$ be a CLPFD of $G^{\mathrm{T}}$, and let $\zeta$ be the number of transmission zeros of $G$ counting multiplicity.
i) If $\operatorname{rank} G=p$, then $\zeta=\frac{1}{2} \operatorname{deg} \operatorname{det} N N^{\mathrm{T}}$.
ii) If $\operatorname{rank} G=m$, then $\zeta=\frac{1}{2} \operatorname{deg} \operatorname{det} \hat{N} \hat{N}^{\mathrm{T}}$.

Proof. To prove $i$, note that it follows from Corollary 5.3 that $N N^{\mathrm{T}}=U N_{\mathrm{S}} N_{\mathrm{S}}^{\mathrm{T}} U^{\mathrm{T}}$, where $U \in$ $\mathbb{R}[\mathrm{z}]^{p \times p}$ is a unimodular matrix. Since $\operatorname{rank} G=p$, it follows that $N_{\mathrm{S}} N_{\mathrm{S}}^{\mathrm{T}}$ is nonsingular and thus $N N^{\mathrm{T}}$ is nonsingular. Thus $\operatorname{deg} \operatorname{det} N N^{\mathrm{T}}=\operatorname{deg} \operatorname{det} N_{\mathrm{S}} N_{\mathrm{S}}^{\mathrm{T}}=2 \zeta$.

To prove $i i$, note that the number of transmission zeros of $G^{\mathrm{T}}$ is equal to the number of transmission zeros of $G$. Since $\operatorname{rank} G^{\mathrm{T}}=\operatorname{rank} G=m$, applying $i$ ) to $G^{\mathrm{T}}$ yields $i i$.

The zero dynamics of an LPFD of $G$ and the zero dynamics of $G$ are defined in 2.19. The following result gives necessary and sufficient conditions for the existence of nonzero solutions of (2.4).

Proposition 5.8. Let $N \in \mathbb{R}[\mathrm{z}]^{p \times m}$. Then (2.4) has a nonzero solution if and only if there exists $\mathrm{z}_{0} \in \mathbb{C}$ such that $\operatorname{rank} N\left(\mathrm{z}_{0}\right)<m$.

Proof. To prove sufficiency, let $N(\mathbf{q})=\mathbf{q}^{\ell} B_{0}+\mathbf{q}^{\ell-1} B_{1}+\cdots+B_{\ell}$. Then

$$
\begin{aligned}
N(\mathbf{q}) \mathrm{z}_{0}^{k} & =\left(\mathbf{q}^{\ell} B_{0}+\mathbf{q}^{\ell-1} B_{1}+\cdots+B_{\ell}\right) \mathrm{z}_{0}^{k}=\mathrm{z}_{0}^{k+\ell} B_{0}+\mathrm{z}_{0}^{k+\ell-1} B_{1}+\cdots+\mathrm{z}_{0}^{k} B_{\ell} \\
& =\left(\mathrm{z}_{0}^{\ell} B_{0}+\mathrm{z}_{0}^{\ell-1} B_{1}+\cdots+B_{\ell}\right) \mathrm{z}_{0}^{k}=N\left(\mathrm{z}_{0}\right) \mathrm{z}_{0}^{k} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Note that there exists $\bar{u} \neq 0$ such that $N\left(\mathrm{z}_{0}\right) \bar{u}=0$. For all $k \geq 0$, define $u_{k} \triangleq \mathrm{z}_{0}^{k} \bar{u}$. Hence, for all $k \geq 0, N(\mathbf{q}) u_{k}=N(\mathbf{q}) \mathrm{z}_{0}^{k} \bar{u}=N\left(\mathrm{z}_{0}\right) \mathrm{z}_{0}^{k} \bar{u}=\mathrm{z}_{0}^{k} N\left(\mathrm{z}_{0}\right) \bar{u}=0$. Since $\bar{u} \neq 0$, it follows that $u$ is a nonzero solution of (2.4).

To prove necessity, note that, in the case where $\operatorname{rank} N<m$, it follows that, for all $\mathrm{z}_{0} \in \mathbb{C}$, $\operatorname{rank} N\left(\mathrm{z}_{0}\right)<m$. In the case where $\operatorname{rank} N=m$, there exists a unimodular matrix $U \in \mathbb{R}[\mathbf{q}]^{p \times p}$ such that $\bar{N} \triangleq U N=\left[\begin{array}{c}N_{0} \\ 0_{(p-m) \times m}\end{array}\right]$, where $N_{0} \in \mathbb{R}[\mathbf{q}]^{m \times m}$ is nonsingular. Then (2.4) implies that $\bar{N}(\mathbf{q}) u_{k}=U(\mathbf{q}) N(\mathbf{q}) u_{k}=0$, and thus $N_{0}(\mathbf{q}) u_{k}=0$. Now, suppose that $N_{0}$ is unimodular. Then $N_{0}^{-1}(\mathbf{q})$ is a polynomial matrix, and hence (2.4) is equivalent to $N_{0}^{-1}(\mathbf{q}) N_{0}(\mathbf{q}) u_{k}=0$, and thus, for all $k \geq 0, u_{k}=0$, which is a contradiction. It thus follows that $N_{0}$ is not unimodular, that is, $\operatorname{det} N_{0}$ is a nonconstant polynomial in $\mathbf{q}$. Let $\mathrm{z}_{0}$ be a root of $\operatorname{det} N_{0}$. Hence, $\operatorname{rank} N_{0}\left(\mathrm{z}_{0}\right)<m$. Since, for all z $\in \mathbb{C}, \operatorname{rank} N(\mathrm{z})=\operatorname{rank} \bar{N}(\mathrm{z})=\operatorname{rank} N_{0}(\mathrm{z})$, it follows that $\operatorname{rank} N\left(\mathrm{z}_{0}\right)=\operatorname{rank} N_{0}\left(\mathrm{z}_{0}\right)<m$.

The following result characterizes the possibly complex solutions of (2.4).

Proposition 5.9. Let $\mathrm{z}_{0} \in \mathbb{C}$, and let $\bar{u} \in \mathbb{C}^{m}$. Then, for all $k \geq 0, u_{k} \triangleq \mathrm{z}_{0}^{k} \bar{u}$ satisfies (2.4) if and only if $N\left(\mathrm{z}_{0}\right) \bar{u}=0$.

Proof. Let $N(\mathbf{q})=\mathbf{q}^{\ell} B_{0}+\mathbf{q}^{\ell-1} B_{1}+\cdots+B_{\ell}$. Then

$$
\begin{aligned}
N(\mathbf{q}) \mathrm{z}_{0}^{k} & =\left(\mathbf{q}^{\ell} B_{0}+\mathbf{q}^{\ell-1} B_{1}+\cdots+B_{\ell}\right) \mathrm{z}_{0}^{k}=\mathrm{z}_{0}^{k+\ell} B_{0}+\mathrm{z}_{0}^{k+\ell-1} B_{1}+\cdots+\mathrm{z}_{0}^{k} B_{\ell} \\
& =\left(\mathrm{z}_{0}^{\ell} B_{0}+\mathrm{z}_{0}^{\ell-1} B_{1}+\cdots+B_{\ell}\right) \mathrm{z}_{0}^{k}=N\left(\mathrm{z}_{0}\right) \mathrm{z}_{0}^{k}
\end{aligned}
$$

To prove sufficiency, note that, for all $k \geq 0, N(\mathbf{q}) u_{k}=N(\mathbf{q}) \mathrm{z}_{0}^{k} \bar{u}=N\left(\mathrm{z}_{0}\right) \mathrm{z}_{0}^{k} \bar{u}=\mathrm{z}_{0}^{k} N\left(\mathrm{z}_{0}\right) \bar{u}=0$. To prove necessity, note that, for all $k \geq 0,0=N(\mathbf{q}) u_{k}=\mathrm{z}_{0}^{k} N\left(\mathrm{z}_{0}\right) \bar{u}$. Letting $k=0$ yields $N\left(\mathrm{z}_{0}\right) \bar{u}=0$.

Proposition 5.8 and Proposition 5.9 discuss solutions of (2.4) in relation to an arbitrary complex number $\mathrm{z}_{0}$. Since the focus of this chapter is on transmission zeros, we now give a result on the relationship between the solutions of (2.4) and a transmission zero $\mathrm{z}_{0}$ of $G$.

Theorem 5.10. Let $(D, N)$ be an LPFD of $G$. The following statements hold:
i) If $\operatorname{rank} N<m$, then, for all $\mathrm{z}_{0} \in \mathbb{C}$, there exists a nonzero $\bar{u} \in \mathcal{N}\left(N\left(\mathrm{z}_{0}\right)\right)$, and, for all $k \geq 0, u_{k} \triangleq \mathrm{z}_{0}^{k} \bar{u}$, is a nonzero solution of (2.4).
ii) If $\operatorname{rank} N=m$, and $\mathrm{z}_{0} \in \mathbb{C}$ is a transmission zero of $G$, then there exists a nonzero $\bar{u} \in$ $\mathcal{N}\left(N\left(\mathrm{z}_{0}\right)\right)$, and, for all $k \geq 0, u_{k} \triangleq \mathrm{z}_{0}^{k} \bar{u}$, is a nonzero solution of (2.4).
iii) If $\operatorname{rank} N=m,(D, N)$ is a CLPFD of $G$, and $\mathrm{z}_{0} \in \mathbb{C}$, then the following statements are equivalent.
(a) $\mathrm{z}_{0}$ is a transmission zero of $G$.
(b) There exists a nonzero $\bar{u} \in \mathcal{N}\left(N\left(\mathrm{z}_{0}\right)\right)$.
(c) There exists $\bar{u} \neq 0$ such that, for all $k \geq 0, u_{k} \triangleq \mathrm{z}_{0}^{k} \bar{u}$ is a nonzero solution of (2.4).

Proof. i) follows from Proposition 5.9, and ii) follows from Proposition 5.6 and Proposition 5.9. $a) \Longrightarrow b$ ) in $i i i$ ) follows from Proposition 5.6, b) $\Longrightarrow$ c) in $i i i$ ) follows from Proposition 5.9, and c) $\Longrightarrow$ a) in $i i i$ ) follows from Proposition 5.8 and Proposition 5.6.

### 5.3 Equivalence of Output Zeroing in Input-Output Models and State Space Models

If $G$ has a transmission zero, then it follows from [86, p. 25] that there exist an initial condition and a nonzero input such that the response of a minimal state space realization of $G$ is identically zero. This is called output zeroing in state space models. Proposition 5.12 and Corollary 5.13 deal with output zeroing in state space models, and Theorem 5.14 relates output zeroing in state space models to the transmission zeros of $G$. In contrast, Theorem 5.16 and Corollary 5.17 discuss output zeroing in input-output models. Next, Theorem 5.18 relates output zeroing in input-output models to the transmission zeros of $G$, where it is shown that, if $G$ has a transmission zero, then there exists a nonzero input such that the response of a time-domain input-output representation of $G$ is identically zero. Furthermore, this section connects output zeroing in input-output models to output zeroing in state space models. In particular, Theorem 5.20 and Theorem 5.24 establish the equivalence between output zeroing in input-output models and output zeroing in state space models.

The following result is an immediate consequence of the definition of invariant zeros.

Proposition 5.11. Let $(A, B, C, E)$ be a realization of $G$, where $A \in \mathbb{R}^{n \times n}$, and and let $Z$ be the Rosenbrock system matrix. Then, the following statements hold:
i) Assume that $\operatorname{rank} \mathcal{Z}<n+m$. Then, for all $\mathrm{z}_{0} \in \mathbb{C}$, there exists nonzero $\left[\begin{array}{l}\bar{x} \\ \bar{u}\end{array}\right] \in \mathcal{N}\left(\mathcal{Z}\left(\mathrm{z}_{0}\right)\right)$.
ii) Assume that $\operatorname{rank} Z=n+m$. Then, $\mathrm{z}_{0} \in \mathbb{C}$ is an invariant zero of $(A, B, C, E)$ if and only
if there exists nonzero $\left[\begin{array}{l}\bar{x} \\ \bar{u}\end{array}\right] \in \mathcal{N}\left(\mathcal{Z}\left(z_{0}\right)\right)$.
iii) Assume that $\operatorname{rank} \mathcal{Z}=n+m$ and $(A, B, C, E)$ is minimal. Then, $\mathrm{z}_{0} \in \mathbb{C}$ is a transmission zero of $G$ if and only if there exists nonzero $\left[\begin{array}{l}\bar{x} \\ \bar{u}\end{array}\right] \in \mathcal{N}\left(\mathcal{Z}\left(\mathrm{z}_{0}\right)\right)$.
The following result on output zeroing in state space models is given by Lemma 2.7 and Lemma 2.9 in [86, p. 25, 31].

Proposition 5.12. Let $(A, B, C, E)$ be a realization of $G$, where $A \in \mathbb{R}^{n \times n}$, and let $\mathrm{z}_{0} \in \mathbb{C}$, $\bar{x} \in \mathbb{C}^{n}$, and $\bar{u} \in \mathbb{C}^{m}$. Furthermore, define $x_{0} \triangleq \bar{x}$, and, for all $k \geq 0$, define $u_{k} \triangleq \mathrm{z}_{0}^{k} \bar{u}$ and consider

$$
\begin{align*}
x_{k+1} & =A x_{k}+B u_{k},  \tag{5.2}\\
y_{k} & =C x_{k}+E u_{k} . \tag{5.3}
\end{align*}
$$

Then, the following statements hold:
i) If $\left[\begin{array}{l}\bar{x} \\ \bar{u}\end{array}\right] \in \mathcal{N}\left(\mathcal{Z}\left(\mathrm{z}_{0}\right)\right)$, then, for all $k \geq 0, y_{k}=0$.
ii) If $(A, C)$ is observable and, for all $k \geq 0, y_{k}=0$, then $\left[\begin{array}{l}\bar{x} \\ \bar{u}\end{array}\right] \in \mathcal{N}\left(z\left(z_{0}\right)\right)$.

In Proposition 5.12, the signal $u$ and initial state $x_{0}$ are not necessarily real. In practice, however, it is desirable to consider real input signals and real states. For this case, the following result is a consequence of statement $i$ ) of Proposition 5.12.

Corollary 5.13. Let $(A, B, C, E)$ be a realization of $G$, where $A \in \mathbb{R}^{n \times n}$, and let $\mathrm{z}_{0} \in \mathbb{C}$ and $\lceil\bar{x}]$ $\in \mathcal{N}\left(\mathcal{Z}\left(\mathrm{z}_{0}\right)\right)$. Define $x_{0} \triangleq \operatorname{Re}(\bar{x})$, and, for all $k \geq 0$, define $u_{k} \triangleq \operatorname{Re}\left(\mathrm{z}_{0}^{k} \bar{u}\right)$ and consider (5.2), $\bar{u}$
(5.3). Then, for all $k \geq 0, y_{k}=0$.

The following result relates output zeroing in state space models to transmission zeros of $G$.

Theorem 5.14. Let $(A, B, C, E)$ be a realization of $G$, where $A \in \mathbb{R}^{n \times n}$, and let $\mathrm{z}_{0}$ be a transmission zero of $G$. Then there exists $\left[\begin{array}{l}\bar{x} \\ \bar{u}\end{array}\right] \in \mathcal{N}\left(\mathcal{Z}\left(\mathrm{z}_{0}\right)\right)$, where $\bar{x} \neq 0$ and $\bar{u} \neq 0$. Furthermore, there exist $x_{0} \neq 0$ and $u \neq 0$ such that $y \equiv 0$, where $x_{0}, u$, and $y$ satisfy (5.2), (5.3), and where $x_{0}$ and $u$ are real.

Proof. It follows from the Kalman decomposition (see Proposition 16.9.12 in [116, p. 1273] or Chapters 2 and 6 in [122]) that there exists a nonsingular matrix $S \in \mathbb{R}^{n \times n}$ such that

$$
\begin{aligned}
& A_{\mathrm{d}} \triangleq S A_{\mathrm{ocf}} S^{-1}=\left[\begin{array}{cccc}
A_{1} & 0 & A_{13} & 0 \\
A_{21} & A_{2} & A_{23} & A_{24} \\
0 & 0 & A_{3} & 0 \\
0 & 0 & A_{43} & A_{4}
\end{array}\right], \\
& B_{\mathrm{d}} \triangleq S B_{\mathrm{ocf}}=\left[\begin{array}{c}
B_{1} \\
B_{2} \\
0 \\
0
\end{array}\right], \\
& C_{\mathrm{d}} \triangleq C_{\mathrm{ocf}} S^{-1}=\left[\begin{array}{llll}
C_{1} & 0 & C_{3} & 0
\end{array}\right],
\end{aligned}
$$

where, for all $i=1, \ldots, 4, A_{i} \in \mathbb{R}^{n_{i} \times n_{i}}$, and $\left(A_{1}, B_{1}, C_{1}, E\right)$ is a minimal realization of $G$. Let $z_{1}$ be the Rosenbrock system matrix of the realization $\left(A_{1}, B_{1}, C_{1}, E\right)$. Since $\mathrm{z}_{0}$ is a transmission zero of $G$, it follows that $\operatorname{rank} \mathcal{Z}_{1}\left(\mathrm{z}_{0}\right)<\operatorname{rank} \mathcal{Z}_{1}$. Let $\mathrm{z}_{1} \in \mathbb{C}$ be such that $\operatorname{rank} \mathcal{Z}_{1}\left(\mathrm{z}_{1}\right)=\operatorname{rank} \mathcal{Z}_{1}$.

Hence $\operatorname{rank} \mathcal{Z}_{1}\left(\mathrm{z}_{0}\right)<\operatorname{rank} \mathcal{Z}_{1}\left(\mathrm{z}_{1}\right)$, and thus Fact 3.14.15 in [116, p. 322] implies that

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \operatorname{rank}\left[\begin{array}{c}
\mathrm{z}_{0} I-A_{1} \\
C_{1}
\end{array}\right]+\operatorname{rank}\left[\begin{array}{c}
B_{1} \\
E
\end{array}\right]-\operatorname{dim}\left(\mathcal{R}\left(\left[\begin{array}{c}
\mathrm{z}_{0} I-A_{1} \\
C_{1}
\end{array}\right]\right) \cap \mathcal{R}\left(\left[\begin{array}{c}
B_{1} \\
E
\end{array}\right]\right)\right) \\
& \quad<\operatorname{rank}\left[\begin{array}{c}
\mathrm{z}_{1} I-A_{1} \\
C_{1}
\end{array}\right]+\operatorname{rank}\left[\begin{array}{c}
B_{1} \\
E
\end{array}\right]-\operatorname{dim}\left(\mathcal{R}\left(\left[\begin{array}{c}
\mathrm{z}_{1} I-A_{1} \\
C_{1}
\end{array}\right]\right) \cap \mathcal{R}\left(\left[\begin{array}{c}
B_{1} \\
E
\end{array}\right]\right) .\right.
\end{aligned}
$$

Since $\left(A_{1}, C_{1}\right)$ is observable, it follows that rank $\left[\begin{array}{c}\mathrm{z}_{0} I-A_{1} \\ C_{1}\end{array}\right]=\operatorname{rank}\left[\begin{array}{c}\mathrm{z}_{1} I-A_{1} \\ C_{1}\end{array}\right]=n_{1}$. Hence, $\operatorname{dim}\left(\mathcal{R}\left(\left[\begin{array}{c}\mathrm{z}_{0} I-A_{1} \\ C_{1}\end{array}\right]\right) \cap \mathcal{R}\left(\left[\begin{array}{c}B_{1} \\ E\end{array}\right]\right)\right)>\operatorname{dim}\left(\mathcal{R}\left(\left[\begin{array}{c}\mathrm{z}_{1} I-A_{1} \\ C_{1}\end{array}\right]\right) \cap \mathcal{R}\left(\left[\begin{array}{c}B_{1} \\ E\end{array}\right]\right)\right) \geq 0$. Thus, there exists $\left[\begin{array}{l}\bar{x}_{1} \\ \bar{u}_{1}\end{array}\right] \in \mathcal{N}\left(z_{1}\left(z_{0}\right)\right)$, where $\bar{x}_{1} \neq 0$ and $\bar{u}_{1} \neq 0$. Define $\bar{x} \triangleq\left[\begin{array}{l}\bar{x}_{1} \\ 0\end{array}\right] \in \mathbb{C}^{n}$ and $\bar{u} \triangleq \bar{u}_{1}$. Then, $\bar{x} \neq 0, \bar{u} \neq 0$, and $\left[\begin{array}{l}\bar{x} \\ \bar{u}\end{array}\right] \in \mathcal{N}\left(z\left(z_{0}\right)\right)$. Without loss of generality, let $\left[\begin{array}{c}\bar{x} \\ \bar{u}\end{array}\right] \in \mathcal{N}\left(z\left(\mathrm{z}_{0}\right)\right)$, where $\operatorname{Re}(\bar{x}) \neq 0$ and $\bar{u} \neq 0$. Define $x_{0} \triangleq$ $\operatorname{Re}(\bar{x})$ and, for all $k \geq 0, u_{k} \triangleq \operatorname{Re}\left(\mathrm{z}_{0}^{k} \bar{u}\right)$. In the case where $\operatorname{Re}(\bar{u}) \neq 0$, note that $u_{0}=\operatorname{Re}(\bar{u}) \neq 0$, and thus $u \neq 0$. In the case where $\operatorname{Re}(\bar{u})=0$, suppose that $\operatorname{Im}\left(\mathrm{z}_{0}\right)=0$. Then, it follows from $\operatorname{Re}\left(z\left(\mathrm{z}_{0}\right)\left[\begin{array}{l}\bar{x} \\ \bar{u}\end{array}\right]\right)=0$ that $\left[\begin{array}{c}\mathrm{z}_{0} I-A \\ C\end{array}\right] \operatorname{Re}(\bar{x})=0$, and thus $\operatorname{Re}(\bar{x})=0$, which is a contradiction. Hence, $\operatorname{Im}\left(z_{0}\right) \neq 0$, which implies that $u_{1}=\operatorname{Re}\left(z_{0} \bar{u}\right)=\operatorname{Im}\left(z_{0}\right) \operatorname{Im}(\bar{u}) \neq 0$, and thus $u \neq 0$. Finally, Corollary 5.13 implies that, for all $k \geq 0, y_{k}=0$.

Theorem 5.16 concerns output zeroing in input-output models. The proof of this result takes advantage of the following lemma.

Lemma 5.15. Let $D_{0}, D_{1}, \ldots, D_{\ell} \in \mathbb{R}^{p \times p}$, assume that $D_{\ell} \neq 0$, and, for all $k \geq 0$, consider the difference equation

$$
\begin{equation*}
D_{\ell} y_{k+\ell}+\cdots+D_{1} y_{k+1}+D_{0} y_{k}=0 \tag{5.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

with the initial condition $y_{0}=y_{1}=\cdots=y_{\ell-1}=0$. If $\operatorname{det}\left(z^{\ell} D_{\ell}+\cdots+z D_{1}+D_{0}\right) \neq 0$, then, for all $k \geq \ell, y_{k}=0$.

Proof. For all $i<0$, define $D_{i} \triangleq 0$, and, for all $k \geq 0$, define

$$
\overline{\mathfrak{T}}_{k} \triangleq\left[\begin{array}{cccc}
D_{\ell} & 0 & \cdots & 0 \\
D_{\ell-1} & D_{\ell} & \cdots & 0 \\
\vdots & \ddots & \ddots & \vdots \\
D_{\ell-k} & D_{\ell-k+1} & \cdots & D_{\ell}
\end{array}\right]=\left[\begin{array}{ll}
Q_{k} & P_{k}
\end{array}\right]
$$

where

$$
Q_{k} \triangleq\left[\begin{array}{c}
D_{\ell} \\
D_{\ell-1} \\
\vdots \\
D_{\ell-k}
\end{array}\right], \quad P_{k} \triangleq\left[\begin{array}{c}
0 \\
\bar{T}_{k-1}
\end{array}\right]
$$

and $\overline{\mathcal{T}}_{-1}$ is the empty matrix. Next, define $D(\mathrm{z}) \triangleq \mathrm{z}^{\ell} D_{\ell}+\cdots+\mathrm{z} D_{1}+D_{0}$ and $G(\mathrm{z}) \triangleq D(1 / \mathrm{z})$. Note that $G$ is a proper finite-impulse-response (FIR) transfer function, and $D_{\ell}, \ldots, D_{0}$ are the Markov parameters of $G$. Since $D$ is nonsingular, it follows that $G$ is invertible, and hence it follows from Proposition 2 in [34] that there exists $d \geq 0$ such that $\operatorname{rank} \overline{\mathcal{T}}_{d}-\operatorname{rank} \overline{\mathcal{T}}_{d-1}=p$. Next, it follows from Fact 3.14.15 in [116, p. 322] that $p=\operatorname{rank} \overline{\mathcal{T}}_{d}-\operatorname{rank} \overline{\mathcal{T}}_{d-1}=\operatorname{rank} Q_{d}-\operatorname{dim}\left(\mathcal{R}\left(Q_{d}\right) \cap \mathcal{R}\left(P_{d}\right)\right)$. Thus, $p+\operatorname{dim}\left(\mathcal{R}\left(Q_{d}\right) \cap \mathcal{R}\left(P_{d}\right)\right)=\operatorname{rank} Q_{d} \leq p$. Hence, $\operatorname{rank} Q_{d}=p$, and $\operatorname{dim}\left(\mathcal{R}\left(Q_{d}\right) \cap \mathcal{R}\left(P_{d}\right)\right)=$ 0.

Next, (5.4) implies that

$$
\overline{\mathcal{T}}_{d}\left[\begin{array}{c}
y_{\ell} \\
y_{\ell+1} \\
\vdots \\
y_{\ell+d+1}
\end{array}\right]=Q_{d} y_{\ell}+P_{d}\left[\begin{array}{c}
y_{\ell+1} \\
y_{\ell+2} \\
\vdots \\
\\
y_{\ell+d+1}
\end{array}\right]=0 .
$$

Since $\operatorname{dim}\left(\mathcal{R}\left(Q_{d}\right) \cap \mathcal{R}\left(P_{d}\right)\right)=0$, it follows that

$$
Q_{d} y_{\ell}=P_{d}\left[\begin{array}{c}
y_{\ell+1} \\
y_{\ell+2} \\
\vdots \\
y_{\ell+d+1}
\end{array}\right]=0 .
$$

Since $\operatorname{rank} Q_{d}=p$, it follows that $y_{\ell}=0$. Since $y_{1}=\cdots=y_{\ell}=0$, repeating the previous argument with $\ell$ replaced by $\ell+1$ implies that $y_{\ell+1}=0$. By induction, it follows that, for all $k \geq \ell, y_{k}=0$.

Theorem 5.16. Let $(D, N)$ be an LPFD of $G$, let $\mathrm{z}_{0} \in \mathbb{C}$, and let $\bar{u} \in \mathbb{C}^{m}$. Let $y_{0}=\cdots=y_{\ell-1}=0$, where $\ell \triangleq \operatorname{deg} D$, and, for all $k \geq 0$, define $u_{k} \triangleq \mathrm{z}_{0}^{k} \bar{u}$ and consider

$$
\begin{equation*}
D(\mathbf{q}) y_{k}=N(\mathbf{q}) u_{k} \tag{5.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then, for all $k \geq \ell, y_{k}=0$ if and only if $N\left(\mathrm{z}_{0}\right) \bar{u}=0$.
Proof. To prove sufficiency, note that Proposition 5.9 implies that, for all $k \geq 0, N(\mathbf{q}) u_{k}=0$. Hence, for all $k \geq 0, D(\mathbf{q}) y_{k}=0$. Since $D$ is nonsingular, Lemma 5.15 implies that, for all $k \geq \ell, y_{k}=0$. To prove necessity, note that, for all $k \geq 0, N(\mathbf{q}) u_{k}=D(\mathbf{q}) y_{k}=0$. Therefore, Proposition 5.9 implies that $N\left(\mathrm{z}_{0}\right) \bar{u}=0$.

For the case of real input signals, the following result is a consequence of the sufficiency part of Theorem 5.16.

Corollary 5.17. Let $(D, N)$ be an LPFD of $G$, let $\mathrm{z}_{0} \in \mathbb{C}$, and let $\bar{u} \in \mathcal{N}\left(N\left(\mathrm{z}_{0}\right)\right)$. Let $y_{0}=\cdots=$ $y_{\ell-1}=0$, where $\ell \triangleq \operatorname{deg} D$, and, for all $k \geq 0$, define $u_{k} \triangleq \operatorname{Re}\left(\mathrm{z}_{0}^{k} \bar{u}\right)$ and consider (5.5). Then, for all $k \geq \ell, y_{k}=0$.

The following result relates output zeroing in input-output models to transmission zeros of $G$.

Theorem 5.18. Let $(D, N)$ be an LPFD of $G$, and let $z_{0}$ be a transmission zero of $G$. Then $\mathcal{N}\left(N\left(z_{0}\right)\right) \neq\{0\}$. Furthermore, let $y_{0}=\cdots=y_{\ell-1}=0$, where $\ell \triangleq \operatorname{deg} D$. Then there exists real $u \neq 0$ such that $u$ and $y \equiv 0$ satisfy (5.5).

Proof. It follows from Proposition 5.6 that $\mathcal{N}\left(N\left(\mathrm{z}_{0}\right)\right) \neq\{0\}$. Let $\bar{u}$ be a nonzero vector in $\mathcal{N}\left(N\left(\mathrm{z}_{0}\right)\right)$ such that $\operatorname{Re}(\bar{u}) \neq 0$, and define, for all $k \geq 0, u_{k} \triangleq \operatorname{Re}\left(\mathrm{z}_{0}^{k} \bar{u}\right)$. Note that $u_{0}=\operatorname{Re}(\bar{u}) \neq 0$, and thus $u \neq 0$. Then it follows from Corollary 5.17 that, for all $k \geq \ell$, $y_{k}=0$ in (5.5).

Next, we consider the equivalence between output zeroing in input-output models and output zeroing in state space models. In particular, Theorem 5.20 shows the equivalence between output zeroing using an MLPFD of $G$ and output zeroing using the observable canonical form realization of $G$ corresponding to the MLPFD of $G$. The observable canonical form realization of $G$ obtained from an MLPFD of $G$ is given in Proposition 5.19.

The following result provides a MIMO extension of the observable canonical form realization given in [123].

Proposition 5.19. Let $\left(D_{\mathrm{M}}, N_{\mathrm{M}}\right)$ be an MLPFD of $G$, and let

$$
\begin{gather*}
D_{\mathrm{M}}(\mathrm{z})=\mathrm{z}^{\ell} I+\mathrm{z}^{\ell-1} A_{1}+\cdots+A_{\ell},  \tag{5.6}\\
N_{\mathrm{M}}(\mathrm{z})=\mathrm{z}^{\ell} B_{0}+\mathrm{z}^{\ell-1} B_{1}+\cdots+B_{\ell}, \tag{5.7}
\end{gather*}
$$

where, for all $i=1, \ldots, \ell, A_{i} \in \mathbb{R}^{p \times p}$, and, for all $i=0, \ldots, \ell, B_{i} \in \mathbb{R}^{p \times m}$. Then, for all $k \geq 0$,

$$
\begin{array}{r}
\hat{x}_{k+1}=A_{\mathrm{ocf}} \hat{x}_{k}+B_{\mathrm{ocf}} u_{k}, \\
y_{k}=C_{\mathrm{ocf}} \hat{x}_{k}+E u_{k}, \tag{5.9}
\end{array}
$$

where

$$
\begin{align*}
& A_{\mathrm{ocf}} \triangleq\left[\begin{array}{cccc}
0 & \cdots & 0 & -A_{\ell} \\
I & \cdots & 0 & -A_{\ell-1} \\
\vdots & \cdots & \vdots & \vdots \\
0 & \cdots & I & -A_{1}
\end{array}\right],  \tag{5.10}\\
& B_{\mathrm{ocf}} \triangleq\left[\begin{array}{c}
B_{\ell}-A_{\ell} B_{0} \\
B_{\ell-1}-A_{\ell-1} B_{0} \\
\vdots \\
B_{1}-A_{1} B_{0}
\end{array}\right],  \tag{5.11}\\
& C_{\mathrm{ocf}} \triangleq\left[\begin{array}{llll}
0 & \cdots & 0 & I
\end{array}\right], \quad E \triangleq B_{0} \tag{5.12}
\end{align*}
$$

$\hat{x}_{k} \triangleq\left[\begin{array}{lll}\hat{x}_{1, k} & \cdots & \hat{x}_{l, k}\end{array}\right]^{\mathrm{T}}$, and, for all $i=0,1, \ldots, \ell-1$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\hat{x}_{\ell-i, k} \triangleq y_{k+i}+\sum_{j=1}^{i} A_{j} y_{k+i-j}-\sum_{j=0}^{i} B_{j} u_{k+i-j} \tag{5.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

is an observable state space model of $G$.
$\left(A_{\text {ocf }}, B_{\text {ocf }}, C_{\text {ocf }}, E\right)$ is the observable canonical form state space realization of $G$ corresponding to $\left(D_{\mathrm{M}}, N_{\mathrm{M}}\right)$.

Theorem 5.20. Let $\left(D_{\mathrm{M}}, N_{\mathrm{M}}\right)$ be an MLPFD of $G$, let $D_{\mathrm{M}}$ and $N_{\mathrm{M}}$ be given by (5.6), (5.7), and let $z_{\text {ocf }}$ be the Rosenbrock system matrix of the realization $\left(A_{\text {ocf }}, B_{\text {ocf }}, C_{\text {ocf }}, E\right)$, where $\left(A_{\text {ocf }}, B_{\text {ocf }}, C_{\text {ocf }}, E\right)$ is the observable canonical form realization of $G$ corresponding to $\left(D_{\mathrm{M}}, N_{\mathrm{M}}\right)$
given by (5.10)-(5.12). Furthermore, let $\bar{u} \in \mathbb{C}^{m}$ and $\mathrm{z}_{0} \in \mathbb{C}$. Then, there exists $\bar{x} \in \mathbb{C}^{p \ell}$ such that $\in \mathcal{N}\left(Z_{\text {ocf }}\left(\mathrm{z}_{0}\right)\right)$ if and only if $N_{\mathrm{M}}\left(\mathrm{z}_{0}\right) \bar{u}=0$. If these conditions hold, then $[\bar{u}]$

$$
\bar{x}=-\left[\begin{array}{c}
\sum_{i=0}^{\ell-1} \mathrm{z}_{0}^{\ell-i-1} B_{i} \bar{u}  \tag{5.14}\\
\sum_{i=0}^{\ell-2} \mathrm{z}_{0}^{\ell-i-2} B_{i} \bar{u} \\
\vdots \\
B_{0} \bar{u}
\end{array}\right] .
$$

Proof. To prove sufficiency, let

$$
\bar{x}=-\left[\begin{array}{c}
\sum_{i=0}^{\ell-1} \mathrm{z}_{0}^{\ell-i-1} B_{i} \bar{u} \\
\sum_{i=0}^{\ell-2} \mathrm{z}_{0}^{\ell-i-2} B_{i} \bar{u} \\
\vdots \\
B_{0} \bar{u}
\end{array}\right] .
$$

Then,

$$
\begin{equation*}
C_{\mathrm{ocf}} \bar{x}+E \bar{u}=-B_{0} \bar{u}+B_{0} \bar{u}=0 . \tag{5.15}
\end{equation*}
$$

Next, note that

$$
\begin{align*}
\left(\mathrm{z}_{0} I-A_{\text {ocf }}\right) \bar{x} & =-\left[\begin{array}{ccccc}
\mathrm{z}_{0} I & 0 & \cdots & 0 & A_{\ell} \\
-I & \mathrm{z}_{0} I & \cdots & 0 & A_{\ell-1} \\
\vdots & \vdots & \cdots & \vdots & \vdots \\
0 & 0 & \cdots & -I & \mathrm{z}_{0} I+A_{1}
\end{array}\right]\left[\begin{array}{c}
\sum_{i=0}^{\ell-1} \mathrm{z}_{0}^{\ell-i-1} B_{i} \bar{u} \\
\ell=-2 \\
\sum_{i=0}^{\ell-2} \mathrm{z}_{0}^{\ell-i-2} B_{i} \bar{u} \\
\vdots \\
B_{0} \bar{u}
\end{array}\right] \\
& =\left[\begin{array}{c}
-\mathrm{z}_{0} \sum_{i=0}^{\ell-1} \mathrm{z}_{0}^{\ell-i-1} B_{i} \bar{u}-A_{\ell} B_{0} \bar{u} \\
\sum_{i=0}^{\ell-1} \mathrm{z}_{0}^{\ell-i-1} B_{i} \bar{u}-\mathrm{z}_{0} \sum_{i=0}^{\ell-2} \mathrm{z}_{0}^{\ell-i-2} B_{i} \bar{u}-A_{\ell-1} B_{0} \bar{u} \bar{u} \\
\vdots \\
\sum_{i=0}^{1} \mathrm{z}_{0}^{1-i} B_{i} \bar{u}-\mathrm{z}_{0} B_{0} \bar{u}-A_{1} B_{0} \bar{u}
\end{array}\right], \tag{5.16}
\end{align*}
$$

and

$$
B_{\mathrm{ocf}} \bar{u}=\left[\begin{array}{c}
B_{\ell}-A_{\ell} B_{0}  \tag{5.17}\\
B_{\ell-1}-A_{\ell-1} B_{0} \\
\vdots \\
B_{1}-A_{1} B_{0}
\end{array}\right] \bar{u}=\left[\begin{array}{c}
B_{\ell} \bar{u}-A_{\ell} B_{0} \bar{u} \\
B_{\ell-1} \bar{u}-A_{\ell-1} B_{0} \bar{u} \\
\vdots \\
B_{1} \bar{u}-A_{1} B_{0} \bar{u}
\end{array}\right] .
$$

Subtracting (5.17) from (5.16) yields

$$
\begin{align*}
\left(\mathrm{z}_{0} I-A_{\mathrm{ocf}}\right) \bar{x}-B_{\mathrm{ocf}} \bar{u} & =\left[\begin{array}{c}
-\sum_{i=0}^{\ell-1} \mathrm{z}_{0}^{\ell-i} B_{i} \bar{u}-B_{\ell} \bar{u} \\
\sum_{i=0}^{\ell-1} \mathrm{z}_{0}^{\ell-i-1} B_{i} \bar{u}-\sum_{i=0}^{\ell-2} \mathrm{z}_{0}^{\ell-i-1} B_{i} \bar{u}-B_{\ell-1} \bar{u} \\
\vdots \\
\sum_{i=0}^{1} \mathrm{z}_{0}^{1-i} B_{i} \bar{u}-\mathrm{z}_{0} B_{0} \bar{u}-B_{1} \bar{u}
\end{array}\right] \\
& =\left[\begin{array}{c}
\sum_{i=0}^{\ell} \mathrm{z}_{0}^{\ell-i} B_{i} \bar{u} \\
\sum_{i=0}^{\ell-1} \mathrm{z}_{0}^{\ell-i-1} B_{i} \bar{u}-\sum_{i=0}^{\ell-1} \mathrm{z}_{0}^{\ell-i-1} B_{i} \bar{u} \\
\vdots \\
\mathrm{z}_{0} B_{0} \bar{u}+B_{1} \bar{u}-\mathrm{z}_{0} B_{0} \bar{u}-B_{1} \bar{u}
\end{array}\right]=\left[\begin{array}{c}
\sum_{i=0}^{\ell} \mathrm{z}_{0}^{\ell-i} B_{i} \bar{u} \\
0 \\
\vdots \\
0
\end{array}\right] . \tag{5.18}
\end{align*}
$$

Since $0=N_{\mathrm{M}}\left(\mathrm{z}_{0}\right) \bar{u}=\sum_{i=0}^{\ell} \mathrm{z}_{0}^{\ell-i} B_{i} \bar{u}$, (5.18) implies that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(\mathrm{z}_{0} I-A_{\mathrm{ocf}}\right) \bar{x}-B_{\mathrm{ocf}} \bar{u}=0 . \tag{5.19}
\end{equation*}
$$

It thus follows from (5.15) and (5.19) that $\left[\begin{array}{l}\bar{x} \\ \bar{u}\end{array}\right] \in \mathcal{N}\left(Z_{\text {ocf }}\left(\mathrm{z}_{0}\right)\right)$.
To prove necessity, let $\bar{x}=\left[\begin{array}{lll}\bar{x}_{1}^{\mathrm{T}} & \cdots & \bar{x}_{\ell}^{\mathrm{T}}\end{array}\right]^{\mathrm{T}}$, where $\bar{x}_{1}, \ldots, \bar{x}_{\ell} \in \mathbb{C}^{p}$. Then,

$$
\begin{align*}
0 & =\left(\mathrm{z}_{0} I-A_{\mathrm{ocf}}\right) \bar{x}-B_{\mathrm{ocf}} \bar{u} \\
& =\left[\begin{array}{ccccc}
\mathrm{z}_{0} I & 0 & \cdots & 0 & A_{\ell} \\
-I & \mathrm{z}_{0} I & \cdots & 0 & A_{\ell-1} \\
\vdots & \vdots & \cdots & \vdots & \vdots \\
0 & 0 & \cdots & -I & \mathrm{z}_{0} I+A_{1}
\end{array}\right]\left[\begin{array}{c}
\bar{x}_{1} \\
\bar{x}_{2} \\
\vdots \\
\bar{x}_{l}
\end{array}\right]-\left[\begin{array}{c}
B_{\ell}-A_{\ell} B_{0} \\
B_{\ell-1}-A_{\ell-1} B_{0} \\
\vdots \\
B_{1}-A_{1} B_{0}
\end{array}\right] \bar{u} . \tag{5.20}
\end{align*}
$$

Note that $0=C \bar{x}+E \bar{u}=\bar{x}_{\ell}+B_{0} \bar{u}$ implies that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\bar{x}_{\ell}=-B_{0} \bar{u} . \tag{5.21}
\end{equation*}
$$

Hence, (5.20) and (5.21) imply that

$$
\begin{align*}
\bar{x}_{\ell-1} & =\left(\mathrm{z}_{0} I+A_{1}\right) \bar{x}_{\ell}-B_{1} \bar{u}+A_{1} B_{0} \bar{u}=-\left(\mathrm{z}_{0} I+A_{1}\right) B_{0} \bar{u}-B_{1} \bar{u}+A_{1} B_{0} \bar{u} \\
& =-\mathrm{z}_{0} B_{0} \bar{u}-B_{1} \bar{u} . \tag{5.22}
\end{align*}
$$

Next, (5.20)-(5.22) imply that

$$
\begin{align*}
\bar{x}_{\ell-2} & =\mathrm{z}_{0} \bar{x}_{\ell-1}+A_{2} \bar{x}_{\ell}-B_{2} \bar{u}+A_{2} B_{0} \bar{u}=-\mathrm{z}_{0}^{2} B_{0} \bar{u}-\mathrm{z}_{0} B_{1} \bar{u}-A_{2} B_{0} \bar{u}-B_{2} \bar{u}+A_{2} B_{0} \bar{u} \\
& =-\mathrm{z}_{0}^{2} B_{0} \bar{u}-\mathrm{z}_{0} B_{1} \bar{u}-B_{2} \bar{u} . \tag{5.23}
\end{align*}
$$

Proceeding similarly, it follows that, for all $j=1, \ldots, \ell, \bar{x}_{j}=-\sum_{i=0}^{\ell-j} \mathrm{z}_{0}^{\ell-i-j} B_{i} \bar{u}$, and thus (5.14) holds. Finally, it follows from (5.14) and (5.20) that

$$
\begin{aligned}
0 & =\mathrm{z}_{0} \bar{x}_{1}+A_{\ell} \bar{x}_{\ell}-B_{\ell} \bar{u}+A_{\ell} B_{0} \bar{u}=-\sum_{i=0}^{\ell-1} \mathrm{z}_{0}^{\ell-i} B_{i} \bar{u}-A_{\ell} B_{0} \bar{u}-B_{\ell} \bar{u}+A_{\ell} B_{0} \bar{u} \\
& =-\sum_{i=0}^{\ell} \mathrm{z}_{0}^{\ell-i} B_{i} \bar{u}=-N\left(\mathrm{z}_{0}\right) \bar{u}
\end{aligned}
$$

Note that Theorem 5.20 relates output zeroing using an MLPFD of $G$ to output zeroing using a specific realization of $G$, which is obtained from the given MLPFD and is not necessarily minimal. In order to obtain a more general result, we next consider the equivalence between output zeroing using an arbitrary CLPFD of $G$ and output zeroing using an arbitrary minimal realization of $G$. Given an arbitrary CLPFD of a continuous-time transfer function $G$, [124] describes an algorithm for obtaining a minimal realization of $G$. Since the algorithm in [124] is algebraic, the result holds true for discrete-time transfer functions by replacing the differentiation operator with the forward-
shift operator. For illustration, the example given in [124] is reworked in terms of $\mathbf{q}$ as Example 5.21 below. Proposition 5.22 and Proposition 5.23 are consequences of the application of the algorithm in [124] to discrete-time transfer functions. Using Proposition 5.23, the equivalence between output zeroing using an arbitrary CLPFD of $G$ and output zeroing using an arbitrary minimal realization of $G$ is proved in Theorem 5.24.

## Example 5.21. Let

$$
\begin{gather*}
G(z)=\left[\begin{array}{cc}
\frac{z^{2}-2 z+3}{z^{4}+3 z^{3}+7 z^{2}+18 z+6} & \frac{-(2 z+3)(z+3)}{z^{4}+3 z^{3}+7 z^{2}+18 z+6} \\
\frac{1}{z^{2}+6} & \frac{z+3}{z^{2}+6}
\end{array}\right],  \tag{5.24}\\
\hat{D}(z)=\left[\begin{array}{cc}
z^{2}+3 z+1 & 2 z+3 \\
z^{3}+3 z^{2}+z & 3 z^{2}+3 z+6
\end{array}\right], \quad \hat{N}(z)=\left[\begin{array}{cc}
1 & 0 \\
z+1 & z+3
\end{array}\right] . \tag{5.25}
\end{gather*}
$$

Note that $G=\hat{D}^{-1} \hat{N}$, and deg det $\hat{D}=\operatorname{McDeg} G=4$. Hence Proposition 5.5 implies that $(\hat{D}, \hat{N})$ is a CLPFD of $G$. Let $U(\mathrm{z})=\left[\begin{array}{cc}1 & 0 \\ -\mathrm{z} & 1\end{array}\right]$. Since $U$ is unimodular, it follows from Proposition 5.2 that $(D, N)$ is a CLPFD of $G$, where

$$
D(\mathrm{z}) \triangleq U(\mathrm{z}) \hat{D}(\mathrm{z})=\left[\begin{array}{cc}
\mathrm{z}^{2}+3 \mathrm{z}+1 & 2 \mathrm{z}+3  \tag{5.26}\\
0 & \mathrm{z}^{2}+6
\end{array}\right], \quad N(\mathrm{z}) \triangleq U(\mathrm{z}) \hat{N}(\mathrm{z})=\left[\begin{array}{cc}
1 & 0 \\
1 & \mathrm{z}+3
\end{array}\right]
$$

In terms of the forward-shift operator, (5.26) has the form

$$
D(\mathbf{q})=\left[\begin{array}{cc}
\mathbf{q}^{2}+3 \mathbf{q}+1 & 2 \mathbf{q}+3  \tag{5.27}\\
0 & \mathbf{q}^{2}+6
\end{array}\right], \quad N(\mathbf{q})=\left[\begin{array}{cc}
1 & 0 \\
1 & \mathbf{q}+3
\end{array}\right] .
$$

Now, for all $k \geq 0$, let $u_{k}$ and $y_{k}$ satisfy (5.5), let $u_{k}=\left[\begin{array}{ll}u_{1, k} & u_{2, k}\end{array}\right]^{\mathrm{T}}$, and let $y_{k}=\left[\begin{array}{ll}y_{1, k} & y_{2, k}\end{array}\right]^{\mathrm{T}}$.

Define $x_{k} \triangleq\left[\begin{array}{llll}x_{1, k} & x_{2, k} & x_{3, k} & x_{4, k}\end{array}\right]^{\mathrm{T}}$, where

$$
\begin{align*}
& x_{1, k} \triangleq y_{1, k}, \quad x_{2, k} \triangleq y_{1, k+1}+3 y_{1, k},  \tag{5.28}\\
& x_{3, k} \triangleq y_{2, k}, \quad x_{4, k} \triangleq y_{2, k+1}-u_{2, k} . \tag{5.29}
\end{align*}
$$

Then, for all $k \geq 0, u_{k}, y_{k}$, and $x_{k}$ satisfy (5.2) and (5.3) with

$$
A \triangleq\left[\begin{array}{cccc}
-3 & 1 & 0 & 0  \tag{5.30}\\
-1 & 0 & -3 & -2 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & 1 \\
0 & 0 & -6 & 0
\end{array}\right], B \triangleq\left[\begin{array}{cc}
0 & 0 \\
1 & -2 \\
0 & 1 \\
1 & 3
\end{array}\right], C \triangleq\left[\begin{array}{llll}
1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 1 & 0
\end{array}\right], E \triangleq 0
$$

It can be verified numerically that $(A, B, C)$ is a minimal realization of $G$.

The following result is a consequence of the application of the algorithm in [124] to discretetime transfer functions.

Proposition 5.22. Let $(D, N)$ be a CLPFD of $G$ and, for all $k \geq 0$, let $u_{k}$ and $y_{k}$ satisfy (5.5). Then there exist $L_{u} \in \mathbb{R}[\mathbf{q}]^{n \times m}, L_{y} \in \mathbb{R}[\mathbf{q}]^{n \times p}$, and a minimal realization $(A, B, C, E)$ of $G$ such that, for all $k \geq 0$, (5.2) and (5.3) hold with $x_{k} \triangleq L_{u}(\mathbf{q}) u_{k}+L_{y}(\mathbf{q}) y_{k}$, where $n$ is the McMillan degree of $G$.

The following result is needed in the proof of Theorem 5.24.

Proposition 5.23. Let $(A, B, C, E)$ be a minimal realization of $G$, let $(D, N)$ be a CLPFD of $G$ and, for all $k \geq 0$, let $u_{k}$ and $y_{k}$ satisfy (5.5). Then, for all $k \geq 0$, there exist $L_{u} \in \mathbb{R}[\mathbf{q}]^{n \times m}$, $L_{y} \in \mathbb{R}[\mathbf{q}]^{n \times p}$ such that, for all $k \geq 0$, (5.2) and (5.3) hold with $x_{k} \triangleq L_{u}(\mathbf{q}) u_{k}+L_{y}(\mathbf{q}) y_{k}$, where $n$ is the McMillan degree of $G$.

Proof. Note that Proposition 5.22 implies that there exist $\bar{L}_{u} \in \mathbb{R}[\mathbf{q}]^{n \times m}, \bar{L}_{y} \in \mathbb{R}[\mathbf{q}]^{n \times p}$, and a minimal realization $(\bar{A}, \bar{B}, \bar{C}, \bar{E})$ of $G$ such that, for all $k \geq 0$, (5.2) and (5.3) hold with $A, B, C, E$,
and $x_{k}$ replaced with $\bar{A}, \bar{B}, \bar{C}, \bar{E}$, and $\bar{x}_{k}$ respectively, and $\bar{x}_{k} \triangleq \bar{L}_{u}(\mathbf{q}) u_{k}+\bar{L}_{y}(\mathbf{q}) y_{k}$. Next, Proposition 16.9.8 in [116, p. 1272] implies that there exists a unique nonsingular $S \in \mathbb{R}^{n \times n}$ such that $A=S \bar{A} S^{-1}, B=S \bar{B}$, and $C=\bar{C} S^{-1}$. Define $L_{u} \triangleq S \bar{L}_{u}$, and $L_{y} \triangleq S \bar{L}_{y}$. Hence, for all $k \geq 0$, (5.2) and (5.3) hold with $x_{k} \triangleq L_{u}(\mathbf{q}) u_{k}+L_{y}(\mathbf{q}) y_{k}$.

The following result establishes the equivalence between output zeroing using an arbitrary CLPFD of $G$ and output zeroing using an arbitrary minimal realization of $G$. Note that, unlike Theorem 5.20, the LPFD in the following is coprime but not necessarily monic.

Theorem 5.24. Let $(D, N)$ be a CLPFD of $G$, let $(A, B, C, E)$ be an $n$ th-order minimal realization of $G$, let $\mathrm{z}_{0} \in \mathbb{C}$, and let $\bar{u} \in \mathbb{C}^{m}$. Then, there exists $\bar{x} \in \mathbb{C}^{n}$ such that $\left[\begin{array}{l}\bar{x} \\ \bar{u}\end{array}\right] \in \mathcal{N}\left(\mathcal{Z}\left(\mathrm{z}_{0}\right)\right)$ if and only if $N\left(\mathrm{z}_{0}\right) \bar{u}=0$.

Proof. Suppose that, for all $k \geq 0, u_{k}$ and $y_{k}$ satisfy (5.5). Then Proposition 5.23 implies that, for all $k \geq 0$, there exist $L_{u} \in \mathbb{R}[\mathbf{q}]^{n \times m}$ and $L_{y} \in \mathbb{R}[\mathbf{q}]^{n \times p}$ such that, for all $k \geq 0$, (5.2) and (5.3) hold with $x_{k} \triangleq L_{u}(\mathbf{q}) u_{k}+L_{y}(\mathbf{q}) y_{k}$. For all $k \geq 0$, define $u_{k} \triangleq \mathrm{z}_{0}^{k} \bar{u}$. To prove necessity, define $x_{0} \triangleq \bar{x}$. Then, statement $i$ ) in Proposition 5.12 implies that, for all $k \geq 0, y_{k}=0$. Hence it follows from Theorem 5.16 that $N\left(\mathrm{z}_{0}\right) \bar{u}=0$. To prove sufficiency, define $\bar{x} \triangleq L_{u}\left(\mathrm{z}_{0}\right) \bar{u}$, write $L_{y}(\mathbf{q})=q^{r} P_{r}+\cdots+q P_{1}+P_{0}$, define $\ell \triangleq \operatorname{deg} D$, and suppose that $y_{0}=y_{1}=\cdots=y_{c}=0$, where $c \triangleq \max \{r, \ell-1\}$. Note that $x_{k}=L_{u}(\mathbf{q}) u_{k}+L_{y}(\mathbf{q}) y_{k}=L_{u}(\mathbf{q}) \mathrm{z}_{0}^{k} \bar{u}+L_{y}(\mathbf{q}) y_{k}=L_{u}\left(\mathrm{z}_{0}\right) \mathrm{z}_{0}^{k} \bar{u}+$ $L_{y}(\mathbf{q}) y_{k}$. Hence $x_{0}=L_{u}\left(\mathrm{z}_{0}\right) \bar{u}+P_{r} y_{r}+\cdots+P_{1} y_{1}+P_{0} y_{0}=L_{u}\left(\mathrm{z}_{0}\right) \bar{u}=\bar{x}$. Next, it follows from Theorem 5.16 that, for all $k \geq 0, y_{k}=0$. Hence statement $i i$ ) in Proposition 5.12 implies that $\left[\begin{array}{l}\bar{x} \\ \bar{u}\end{array}\right] \in \mathcal{N}\left(\mathcal{Z}\left(z_{0}\right)\right)$.

In the case where $\mathrm{z}_{0}$ is a transmission zero of $G$, Theorem 5.14 implies that there exists nonzero $\left[\begin{array}{l}\bar{x} \\ \bar{u}\end{array}\right]$ $\in \mathcal{N}\left(\mathcal{Z}\left(\mathrm{z}_{0}\right)\right)$, where $\bar{x} \neq 0$ and $\bar{u} \neq 0$, and thus Theorem 5.24 implies that $N\left(\mathrm{z}_{0}\right) \bar{u}=0$.

Therefore, there exist $\bar{x} \neq 0$ and $\bar{u} \neq 0$ such that $\left[\begin{array}{l}\bar{x} \\ \bar{u}\end{array}\right] \in \mathcal{N}\left(\mathcal{Z}\left(\mathrm{z}_{0}\right)\right)$ and $N\left(\mathrm{z}_{0}\right) \bar{u}=0$.

The following example illustrates the equivalence between output zeroing in input-output models and output zeroing in state space models due to transmission zeros.

Example 5.25. Consider the discrete-time transfer function

$$
G(\mathrm{z})=\left[\begin{array}{cc}
\frac{\mathrm{z}-3}{\mathrm{z}+2} & 0  \tag{5.31}\\
\frac{\mathrm{z}}{} & \frac{\mathrm{z}}{\mathrm{z}+1} \\
\mathrm{z}+1 \\
1 & 9 \\
& \frac{\mathrm{z}}{2}
\end{array}\right]
$$

and consider the minimal realization of $G$ given by

$$
A=\left[\begin{array}{ccc}
-2 & 0 & 0  \tag{5.32}\\
0 & -1 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0
\end{array}\right], B=\left[\begin{array}{cc}
1 & 0 \\
1 & -1 \\
0 & 1
\end{array}\right], C=\left[\begin{array}{ccc}
-5 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 1 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 9
\end{array}\right], E=\left[\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 0 \\
0 & 1 \\
1 & 0
\end{array}\right]
$$

Since $\operatorname{rank} \mathcal{Z}(3)=4<5=\operatorname{rank} \mathcal{Z}$, it follows that $\mathrm{z}=3$ is a transmission zero of $G$. For all $k \geq 0$, let $u_{k}, y_{k}$, and $x_{k}$ satisfy (5.2) and (5.3). Then, it follows from Proposition 5.12 that, if

$$
\left[\begin{array}{l}
x_{0}  \tag{5.33}\\
u_{0}
\end{array}\right] \in \mathcal{N}(\mathcal{Z}(3))
$$

and, for all $k \geq 1, u_{k}=3^{k} u_{0}$, then $y \equiv 0$. For example, noting

$$
\left[\begin{array}{c}
3 / 5  \tag{5.34}\\
1 \\
-1 / 3 \\
3 \\
-1
\end{array}\right] \in \mathcal{N}(z(3))
$$

it follows that $y \equiv 0$ with $x_{0}=\left[\begin{array}{c}3 / 5 \\ 1 \\ -1 / 3\end{array}\right]$ and, for all $k \geq 0, u_{k}=3^{k}\left[\begin{array}{c}3 \\ -1\end{array}\right]$.
Next, taking the z-transform of (5.2), (5.3) yields

$$
\begin{equation*}
\hat{y}(\mathrm{z})=G(\mathrm{z}) \hat{u}(\mathrm{z})+\mathrm{z} C(\mathrm{z} I-A)^{-1} x_{0}, \tag{5.35}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\hat{u}$ and $\hat{y}$ denote the z-transforms of $u$ and $y$, respectively. Note that (5.35) includes separate terms for the free response and the forced response of (5.2), (5.3). An alternative time-domain representation of (5.2), (5.3) can be obtained by replacing $z$ by the forward-shift operator $q$. To do this, we first factor $G(\mathrm{z})=D(\mathrm{z})^{-1} N(\mathrm{z})$, where

$$
D(\mathrm{z})=\mathrm{z} I_{3}+\left[\begin{array}{ccc}
2 & 0 & 0  \tag{5.36}\\
0 & 1 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0
\end{array}\right], \quad N(\mathrm{z})=\mathrm{z}\left[\begin{array}{cc}
1 & 0 \\
0 & 1 \\
1 & 0
\end{array}\right]+\left[\begin{array}{cc}
-3 & 0 \\
1 & 0 \\
0 & 9
\end{array}\right]
$$

Note that $(D, N)$ is an MLPFD of $G$. Then, for all $k \geq 0,(5.2)$, (5.3) has the equivalent timedomain input-output model (5.5), where

$$
D(\mathbf{q})=\left[\begin{array}{ccc}
\mathbf{q}+2 & 0 & 0  \tag{5.37}\\
0 & \mathbf{q}+1 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & \mathbf{q}
\end{array}\right], N(\mathbf{q})=\left[\begin{array}{cc}
\mathbf{q}-3 & 0 \\
1 & \mathbf{q} \\
\mathbf{q} & 9
\end{array}\right]
$$

Note that the free response $\mathrm{z} C(\mathrm{z} I-A)^{-1} x_{0}$ in (5.35) has no counterpart in (5.5). In fact, the response of (5.5) includes both the free response and the forced response [125]. Now, in (5.5), letting $y_{0}=0$ and, for all $k \geq 0, u_{k}=3^{k}\left[\begin{array}{c}3 \\ -1\end{array}\right]$ yields $y \equiv 0$. Furthermore, note that $u_{0} \in$ $\mathcal{N}(N(3))$. Hence, the input that produces identically zero output is obtained from the Rosenbrock matrix $Z$ for a state space model as well as the numerator polynomial matrix $N$ for an input-output
model.
To further illustrate the connection between output zeroing in input-output models and output zeroing in state space models, we consider the observable canonical form realization $\left(A_{\text {ocf }}, B_{\text {ocf }}, C_{\text {ocf }}, E\right)$ of $G$ corresponding to $(D, N)$, where

$$
A_{\mathrm{ocf}}=\left[\begin{array}{ccc}
-2 & 0 & 0  \tag{5.38}\\
0 & -1 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0
\end{array}\right], B_{\mathrm{ocf}}=\left[\begin{array}{cc}
-5 & 0 \\
1 & -1 \\
0 & -9
\end{array}\right], C_{\mathrm{ocf}}=I_{3}
$$

By using (5.13), the state of the observable canonical form realization (5.8), (5.9) can be constructed in terms of input and output data. For this example, the initial condition obtained from (5.13) is given by

$$
\hat{x}_{0}=y_{0}-\left[\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 0  \tag{5.39}\\
0 & 1 \\
1 & 0
\end{array}\right] u_{0}
$$

Now, setting $y_{0}=0$ and $u_{0}=\left[\begin{array}{c}3 \\ -1\end{array}\right]$ in (5.39) yields $\hat{x}_{0}=\left[\begin{array}{c}-3 \\ 1 \\ -3\end{array}\right]$, which is the initial condition that, along with the output-zeroing input, produces the identically zero output. It can be verified numerically that $\left[\begin{array}{l}\hat{x}_{0} \\ u_{0}\end{array}\right] \in \mathcal{N}\left(z_{\text {ocf }}(3)\right)$, where $z_{\text {ocf }}$ is the Rosenbrock system matrix of the realization $\left(A_{\text {ocf }}, B_{\text {ocf }}, C_{\text {ocf }}, E\right)$. Hence, the vector consisting of this initial condition and the initial input lies in the null space of the Rosenbrock system matrix.

## CHAPTER 6

## Retrospective Cost Input Estimation

This chapter introduces retrospective cost input estimation [70] which is based on retrospective cost optimization [76]. In RCIE, input estimation is combined with state estimation based on the discrete-time Kalman filter. RCIE can be applied to any multi-input multi-output (MIMO) discrete-time linear-time varying system.

Consider the linear time-varying (LTV) discrete-time system

$$
\begin{align*}
x_{k+1} & =A_{k} x_{k}+B_{k} u_{k}+G_{k} d_{k}+D_{1, k} w_{k},  \tag{6.1}\\
y_{k} & =C_{k} x_{k}+v_{k}, \tag{6.2}
\end{align*}
$$

where $x_{k} \in \mathbb{R}^{l_{x}}$ is the unknown state, $u_{k} \in \mathbb{R}^{l_{u}}$ is the known input, $d_{k} \in \mathbb{R}^{l_{d}}$ is the unknown deterministic input, $w_{k} \in \mathbb{R}^{l_{w}}$ is is unknown white process noise with zero mean and unit variance, $y_{k} \in \mathbb{R}^{l_{y}}$ is the the measured output, and $v_{k} \in \mathbb{R}^{l_{y}}$ is unknown white measurement noise with zero mean and variance $V_{2, k}$. This model may represent a sampled-data version of a continuoustime plant with sample time $T_{\mathrm{s}}$, in which case $x_{k}$ denotes the state at time $t=k T_{\mathrm{s}}$. The matrices $A_{k} \in \mathbb{R}^{l_{x} \times l_{x}}, B_{k} \in \mathbb{R}^{l_{x} \times l_{u}}, G_{k} \in \mathbb{R}^{l_{x} \times l_{d}}, D_{1, k} \in \mathbb{R}^{l_{x} \times l_{w}}, C_{k} \in \mathbb{R}^{l_{y} \times l_{x}}$, and $V_{2, k} \in \mathbb{R}^{l_{y} \times l_{y}}$ are assumed to be known. Define $V_{1, k} \triangleq D_{1, k} D_{1, k}^{\mathrm{T}} \in \mathbb{R}^{l_{x} \times l_{x}}$. The goal is to estimate the unknown input $d_{k}$ and the unknown state $x_{k}$.

### 6.1 Input Estimation

Consider the Kalman filter forecast step

$$
\begin{align*}
x_{\mathrm{fc}, k+1} & =A_{k} x_{\mathrm{da}, k}+B_{k} u_{k}+G_{k} \hat{d}_{k}  \tag{6.3}\\
y_{\mathrm{fc}, k} & =C_{k} x_{\mathrm{fc}, k},  \tag{6.4}\\
z_{k} & =y_{\mathrm{fc}, k}-y_{k}, \tag{6.5}
\end{align*}
$$

where $\hat{d}_{k} \in \mathbb{R}^{l_{d}}$ is the input estimate, $x_{\mathrm{da}, \mathrm{k}} \in \mathbb{R}^{l_{x}}$ is the data-assimilation state, $x_{\mathrm{fc}, k} \in \mathbb{R}^{l_{x}}$ is the forecast state, $z_{k} \in \mathbb{R}^{l_{y}}$ is the innovations. The input estimate $\hat{d}_{k}$ is obtained as the output of the input-estimation subsystem of order $n_{c}$ given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\hat{d}_{k}=\sum_{i=1}^{n_{\mathrm{c}}} P_{i, k} \hat{d}_{k-i}+\sum_{i=0}^{n_{\mathrm{c}}} Q_{i, k} z_{k-i}, \tag{6.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $P_{i, k} \in \mathbb{R}^{l_{d} \times l_{d}}$ and $Q_{i, k} \in \mathbb{R}^{l_{d} \times l_{y}}$. RCIE minimizes $z_{k+1}$ by updating $P_{i, k}$ and $Q_{i, k}$. The subsystem (6.6) can be reformulated as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\hat{d}_{k}=\Phi_{k} \theta_{k} \tag{6.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

where the regressor matrix $\Phi_{k}$ is defined by

$$
\Phi_{k} \triangleq\left[\begin{array}{c}
\hat{d}_{k-1}  \tag{6.8}\\
\vdots \\
\hat{d}_{k-n_{\mathrm{c}}} \\
z_{k} \\
\vdots \\
z_{k-n_{\mathrm{c}}}
\end{array}\right]^{\mathrm{T}} \otimes I_{l_{d}} \in \mathbb{R}^{l_{d} \times l_{\theta}}
$$

and the coefficient vector $\theta_{k}$ is defined by

$$
\theta_{k} \triangleq \operatorname{vec}\left[\begin{array}{llllll}
P_{1, k} & \cdots & P_{n_{\mathrm{c}}, k} & Q_{0, k} & \cdots & Q_{n_{c}, k} \tag{6.9}
\end{array}\right] \in \mathbb{R}^{l_{\theta}}
$$

where $l_{\theta} \triangleq l_{d}^{2} n_{\mathrm{c}}+l_{d} l_{y}\left(n_{\mathrm{c}}+1\right)$, " $\otimes$ " is the Kronecker product, and "vec" is the column-stacking operator. The order $n_{\mathrm{c}}$ of the input-estimation subsystem must be chosen large enough to accommodate an internal model of the unknown input. In terms of the backward shift operator $\mathbf{q}^{-1}$, (6.6) can be written as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\hat{d}_{k}=G_{\hat{d} z, k}\left(\mathbf{q}^{-1}\right) z_{k} \tag{6.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

where

$$
\begin{align*}
G_{\hat{d} z, k} & \triangleq D_{\hat{d} z, k}^{-1} N_{\hat{d} z, k},  \tag{6.11}\\
D_{\hat{d} z, k}\left(\mathbf{q}^{-1}\right) & \triangleq I_{l_{d}}-P_{1, k} \mathbf{q}^{-1}-\cdots-P_{n_{\mathrm{c}}, k} \mathbf{q}^{-n_{\mathrm{c}}}  \tag{6.12}\\
N_{\hat{d} z, k}\left(\mathbf{q}^{-1}\right) & \triangleq Q_{0, k}+Q_{1, k} \mathbf{q}^{-1}+\cdots+Q_{n_{c}, k} \mathbf{q}^{-n_{c}} \tag{6.13}
\end{align*}
$$

Next, define the filtered signals

$$
\begin{align*}
& \Phi_{\mathrm{f}, k} \triangleq G_{\mathrm{f}, k}\left(\mathbf{q}^{-1}\right) \Phi_{k}  \tag{6.14}\\
& \hat{d}_{\mathrm{f}, k} \triangleq G_{\mathrm{f}, k}\left(\mathbf{q}^{-1}\right) \hat{d}_{k} \tag{6.15}
\end{align*}
$$

where $G_{\mathrm{f}, k}$ is an $l_{y} \times l_{d}$ filter of window length $n_{\mathrm{f}} \geq 1$. Define the retrospective performance variable

$$
\begin{equation*}
z_{\mathrm{rc}, k}(\hat{\theta}) \triangleq z_{k}-\left(\hat{d}_{\mathrm{f}, k}-\Phi_{\mathrm{f}, k} \hat{\theta}\right) \tag{6.16}
\end{equation*}
$$

where the coefficient vector $\hat{\theta} \in \mathbb{R}^{l_{\theta}}$ denotes a variable for optimization. The retrospective perfor-
mance variable $z_{\mathrm{rc}, k}(\hat{\theta})$ is used to determine the updated coefficient vector $\theta_{k+1}$ by minimizing a function of $z_{\mathrm{rc}, k}(\hat{\theta})$. The optimized value of $z_{\mathrm{rc}, k}$ is thus given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
z_{\mathrm{rc}, k}\left(\theta_{k+1}\right)=z_{k}-\left(\hat{d}_{\mathrm{f}, k}-\Phi_{\mathrm{f}, k} \theta_{k+1}\right) \tag{6.17}
\end{equation*}
$$

which shows that the updated coefficient vector $\theta_{k+1}$ is "applied" retrospectively with the filtered regressor $\Phi_{\mathrm{f}, k}$. Furthermore, note that the filter $G_{\mathrm{f}, k}$ is used to obtain $\Phi_{\mathrm{f}, k}$ from $\Phi_{k}$ by means of (6.14) but ignores past changes in the coefficient vector, as can be seen by the product $\Phi_{\mathrm{f}, k} \theta_{k+1}$ in (6.17). Consequently, the filtering used to construct (6.17) ignores changes in the coefficient vector over the window $\left[k-n_{\mathrm{f}}, k\right]$.

Next, define the retrospective cost function

$$
\begin{equation*}
J_{k}(\hat{\theta}) \triangleq \sum_{i=0}^{k} \lambda^{k-i}\left(z_{\mathrm{rc}, i}^{\mathrm{T}}(\hat{\theta}) R_{z} z_{\mathrm{rc}, i}(\hat{\theta})+\hat{\theta}^{\mathrm{T}} \Phi_{i}^{\mathrm{T}} R_{d} \Phi_{i} \hat{\theta}\right)+\lambda^{k+1}\left(\hat{\theta}-\theta_{0}\right)^{\mathrm{T}} R_{\theta}\left(\hat{\theta}-\theta_{0}\right) \tag{6.18}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $R_{z} \in \mathbb{R}^{l_{y} \times l_{y}}, R_{d} \in \mathbb{R}^{l_{d} \times l_{d}}$, and $R_{\theta} \in \mathbb{R}^{l_{\theta} \times l_{\theta}}$ are positive definite and $\lambda \in(0,1]$ is the forgetting factor. Define $P_{0} \triangleq R_{\theta}^{-1}$, and define

$$
\begin{align*}
& \Gamma_{k} \triangleq\left(\lambda \widetilde{R}^{-1}+\widetilde{\Phi}_{k} P_{k} \widetilde{\Phi}_{k}^{\mathrm{T}}\right)^{-1}, \quad \widetilde{\Phi}_{k} \triangleq\left[\begin{array}{c}
\Phi_{\mathrm{f}, k} \\
\Phi_{k}
\end{array}\right] \in \mathbb{R}^{\left(l_{y}+l_{d}\right) \times l_{\theta}},  \tag{6.19}\\
& \widetilde{R} \triangleq\left[\begin{array}{cc}
R_{z} & 0 \\
0 & R_{d}
\end{array}\right] \in \mathbb{R}^{\left(l_{y}+l_{d}\right) \times\left(l_{y}+l_{d}\right)}, \quad \widetilde{z}_{k} \triangleq\left[\begin{array}{c}
z_{k}-\hat{d}_{\mathrm{f}, k} \\
0
\end{array}\right] \in \mathbb{R}^{l_{y}+l_{d}} . \tag{6.20}
\end{align*}
$$

Furthermore, for all $k \geq 0$, denote the minimizer of the function given by (6.18) as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\theta_{k+1} \triangleq \underset{\hat{\theta}}{\operatorname{argmin}} J_{k}(\hat{\theta}) . \tag{6.21}
\end{equation*}
$$

Substituting (6.16) in (6.18) yields

$$
\begin{aligned}
J_{k}(\hat{\theta}) & =\sum_{i=0}^{k} \lambda^{k-i}\left(\widetilde{z}_{i}+\widetilde{\Phi}_{i} \hat{\theta}\right)^{\mathrm{T}} \widetilde{R}\left(\widetilde{z}_{i}+\widetilde{\Phi}_{i} \hat{\theta}\right)+\lambda^{k+1}\left(\hat{\theta}-\theta_{0}\right)^{\mathrm{T}} P_{0}^{-1}\left(\hat{\theta}-\theta_{0}\right) \\
& =\sum_{i=0}^{k} \lambda^{k-i}\left(\widetilde{R}^{1 / 2} \widetilde{z}_{i}+\widetilde{R}^{1 / 2} \widetilde{\Phi}_{i} \hat{\theta}\right)^{\mathrm{T}}\left(\widetilde{R}^{1 / 2} \widetilde{z}_{i}+\widetilde{R}^{1 / 2} \widetilde{\Phi}_{i} \hat{\theta}\right)+\lambda^{k+1}\left(\hat{\theta}-\theta_{0}\right)^{\mathrm{T}} P_{0}^{-1}\left(\hat{\theta}-\theta_{0}\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

Then, it follows from Theorem 2 in [126] that, for all $k \geq 0$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& P_{k+1}=\frac{1}{\lambda} P_{k}-\frac{1}{\lambda} P_{k} \widetilde{\Phi}_{k}^{\mathrm{T}} \widetilde{R}^{1 / 2}\left(\lambda I+\widetilde{R}^{1 / 2} \widetilde{\Phi}_{k} P_{k} \widetilde{\Phi}_{k}^{\mathrm{T}} \widetilde{R}^{1 / 2}\right)^{-1} \widetilde{R}^{1 / 2} \widetilde{\Phi}_{k} P_{k}, \\
& \theta_{k+1}=\theta_{k}-P_{k} \widetilde{\Phi}_{k}^{\mathrm{T}} \widetilde{R}^{1 / 2}\left(\lambda I+\widetilde{R}^{1 / 2} \widetilde{\Phi}_{k} P_{k} \widetilde{\Phi}_{k}^{\mathrm{T}} \widetilde{R}^{1 / 2}\right)^{-1} \widetilde{R}^{1 / 2}\left(\widetilde{z}_{k}+\widetilde{\Phi}_{k} \theta_{k}\right),
\end{aligned}
$$

which imply that

$$
\begin{align*}
P_{k+1} & =\frac{1}{\lambda}\left(P_{k}-P_{k} \widetilde{\Phi}_{k}^{\mathrm{T}} \Gamma_{k} \widetilde{\Phi}_{k} P_{k}\right),  \tag{6.22}\\
\theta_{k+1} & =\theta_{k}-P_{k} \widetilde{\Phi}_{k}^{\mathrm{T}} \Gamma_{k}\left(\widetilde{z}_{k}+\widetilde{\Phi}_{k} \theta_{k}\right) . \tag{6.23}
\end{align*}
$$

The RLS update equations (6.22) and (6.23) give the unique global minimizer $\theta_{k+1}$ of (6.18). Using the updated coefficient vector given by (6.23), the estimated input at step $k+1$ is given by replacing $k$ by $k+1$ in (6.7). We choose $\theta_{0}=0$, and thus, $\hat{d}_{0}=0$.

### 6.2 State Estimation

In order to estimate the state $x_{k}, x_{\mathrm{fc}, k}$ given by (6.3) is used to obtain the estimate $x_{\mathrm{da}, k}$ of $x_{k}$ given by the Kalman filter data-assimilation step

$$
\begin{equation*}
x_{\mathrm{da}, k}=x_{\mathrm{fc}, k}+K_{\mathrm{da}, k} z_{k}, \tag{6.24}
\end{equation*}
$$

$K_{\mathrm{da}, k} \in \mathbb{R}^{l_{x} \times l_{y}}$ is the state estimator gain or the Kalman gain. The expression for the optimal state estimator gain that produces the minimum mean square error is derived in section 6.4.

### 6.3 Error Systems

Define the data-assimilation error $e_{\mathrm{da}, k} \triangleq x_{k}-x_{\mathrm{da}, k}$, the forecast error $e_{\mathrm{fc}, k} \triangleq x_{k}-x_{\mathrm{fc}, k}$, and the input-estimation error $e_{d, k} \triangleq d_{k}-\hat{d}_{k}$. Furthermore, define

$$
\begin{equation*}
\widetilde{K}_{k} \triangleq I+K_{\mathrm{da}, k} C_{k}, \quad \bar{A}_{k} \triangleq A_{k}\left(I+K_{\mathrm{da}, k} C_{k}\right), \quad \bar{B}_{k} \triangleq-A_{k} K_{\mathrm{da}, k} \tag{6.25}
\end{equation*}
$$

Note that it follows from (6.1)-(6.5) and (6.24) that

$$
\begin{align*}
e_{\mathrm{fc}, k+1} & =x_{k+1}-x_{\mathrm{fc}, k+1} \\
& =A_{k} x_{k}+D_{1, k} w_{k}+G_{k} d_{k}-A_{k} x_{\mathrm{da}, k}-G_{k} \hat{d}_{k} \\
& =A_{k} x_{k}+G_{k} e_{d, k}+D_{1, k} w_{k}-A_{k}\left(x_{\mathrm{fc}, k}+K_{\mathrm{da}, k} z_{k}\right) \\
& =A_{k}\left(x_{k}-x_{\mathrm{fc}, k}\right)+G_{k} e_{d, k}+D_{1, k} w_{k}-A_{k} K_{\mathrm{da}, k}\left(C_{k} x_{\mathrm{fc}, k}-C_{k} x_{k}-v_{k}\right) \\
& =\bar{A}_{k} e_{\mathrm{fc}, k}+G_{k} e_{d, k}+D_{1, k} w_{k}-\bar{B}_{k} v_{k} \tag{6.26}
\end{align*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{align*}
e_{\mathrm{da}, k} & =x_{k}-x_{\mathrm{da}, k}=x_{k}-x_{\mathrm{fc}, k}-K_{\mathrm{da}, k}\left(C_{k} x_{\mathrm{fc}, k}-C_{k} x_{k}-v_{k}\right) \\
& =\left(I+K_{\mathrm{da}, k} C_{k}\right) e_{\mathrm{fc}, k}+K_{\mathrm{da}, k} v_{k} . \tag{6.27}
\end{align*}
$$

Replacing $k$ by $k+1$ in (6.27), and using (6.1) and (6.3) yields

$$
\begin{align*}
e_{\mathrm{da}, k+1} & =\widetilde{K}_{k+1}\left(A_{k} x_{k}+D_{1, k} w_{k}+G_{k} d_{k}-A_{k} x_{\mathrm{da}, k}-G_{k} \hat{d}_{k}\right)+K_{\mathrm{da}, k+1} v_{k+1} \\
& =\widetilde{K}_{k+1} A_{k} e_{\mathrm{da}, k}+\widetilde{K}_{k+1} G_{k} e_{d, k}+\widetilde{K}_{k+1} D_{1, k} w_{k}+K_{\mathrm{da}, k+1} v_{k+1} \tag{6.28}
\end{align*}
$$

### 6.4 Kalman Gain

The following result gives the expression for the Kalman gain which is the optimal state estimator gain that produces the minimal mean-square error.

Theorem 6.1. Consider the system given by (6.1) and (6.2), and the Kalman filter given by (6.3)(6.5), and (6.24). Let $P_{\mathrm{da}, k} \in \mathbb{R}^{l_{x} \times l_{x}}$ be the variance of $e_{\mathrm{da}, k}$ and let $P_{\mathrm{fc}, k} \in \mathbb{R}^{l_{x} \times l_{x}}$ be the variance of $e_{\mathrm{fc}, k}$. Assume that, for all $k \geq 0, C_{k} P_{\mathrm{fc}, k} C_{k}^{\mathrm{T}}+V_{2, k}$ is nonsingular. Then, for all $k \geq 0$, the optimal state estimator gain that gives the minimal mean-square data-assimilation error is given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
K_{\mathrm{da}, k}=-P_{\mathrm{fc}, k} C_{k}^{\mathrm{T}}\left(C_{k} P_{\mathrm{fc}, k} C_{k}^{\mathrm{T}}+V_{2, k}\right)^{-1}, \tag{6.29}
\end{equation*}
$$

and the variance update equations are given by

$$
\begin{align*}
P_{\mathrm{fc}, k+1} & =A_{k} P_{\mathrm{da}, k} A_{k}^{\mathrm{T}}+V_{1, k}+\widetilde{V}_{\mathrm{da}, k},  \tag{6.30}\\
P_{\mathrm{da}, k} & =\left(I+K_{\mathrm{da}, k} C_{k}\right) P_{\mathrm{fc}, k}, \tag{6.31}
\end{align*}
$$

where

$$
\begin{equation*}
\widetilde{V}_{\mathrm{da}, k} \triangleq G_{k} \operatorname{var}\left(e_{d, k}\right) G_{k}^{\mathrm{T}}+A_{k} \operatorname{cov}\left(e_{\mathrm{da}, k}, e_{d, k}\right) G_{k}^{\mathrm{T}}+G_{k} \operatorname{cov}\left(e_{d, k}, e_{\mathrm{da}, k}\right) A_{k}^{\mathrm{T}} \tag{6.32}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. Note that (6.1) and (6.3) imply

$$
\begin{aligned}
P_{\mathrm{fc}, k+1}= & \operatorname{var}\left(e_{\mathrm{fc}, k+1}\right)=\operatorname{var}\left(A_{k}\left(x_{k}-x_{\mathrm{da}, k}\right)+D_{1, k} w_{k}+G_{k} e_{d, k}\right) \\
= & A_{k} \operatorname{var}\left(e_{\mathrm{da}, k}\right) A_{k}^{\mathrm{T}}+D_{1, k} \operatorname{var}\left(w_{k}\right) D_{1, k}^{\mathrm{T}}+G_{k} \operatorname{var}\left(e_{d, k}\right) G_{k}^{\mathrm{T}}+A_{k} \operatorname{cov}\left(e_{\mathrm{da}, k}, w_{k}\right) D_{1, k}^{\mathrm{T}} \\
& +D_{1, k} \operatorname{cov}\left(w_{k}, e_{\mathrm{da}, k}\right) A_{k}^{\mathrm{T}}+G_{k} \operatorname{cov}\left(e_{d, k}, w_{k}\right) D_{1, k}^{\mathrm{T}}+D_{1, k} \operatorname{cov}\left(w_{k}, e_{d, k}\right) G_{k}^{\mathrm{T}} \\
& +A_{k} \operatorname{cov}\left(e_{\mathrm{da}, k}, e_{d, k}\right) G_{k}^{\mathrm{T}}+G_{k} \operatorname{cov}\left(e_{d, k}, e_{\mathrm{da}, k}\right) A_{k}^{\mathrm{T}} \\
= & A_{k} P_{\mathrm{da}, k} A_{k}^{\mathrm{T}}+V_{1, k}+\widetilde{V}_{\mathrm{da}, k} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Similarly, (6.2), (6.4), (6.5), and (6.24) imply that

$$
\begin{align*}
P_{\mathrm{da}, k}= & \operatorname{var}\left(x_{k}-x_{\mathrm{fc}, k}-K_{\mathrm{da}, k} C_{k} x_{\mathrm{fc}, k}+K_{\mathrm{da}, k}\left(C_{k} x_{k}+v_{k}\right)\right) \\
= & \operatorname{var}\left(\left(I+K_{\mathrm{da}, k} C_{k}\right)\left(x_{k}-x_{\mathrm{fc}, k}\right)+K_{\mathrm{da}, k} v_{k}\right) \\
= & \left(I+K_{\mathrm{da}, k} C_{k}\right) \operatorname{var}\left(e_{\mathrm{fc}, k}\right)\left(I+K_{\mathrm{da}, k} C_{k}\right)^{\mathrm{T}}+K_{\mathrm{da}, k} \operatorname{var}\left(v_{k}\right) K_{\mathrm{da}, k}^{\mathrm{T}} \\
& +\left(I+K_{\mathrm{da}, k} C_{k}\right) \operatorname{cov}\left(e_{\mathrm{fc}, k}, v_{k}\right) K_{\mathrm{da}, k}^{\mathrm{T}}+K_{\mathrm{da}, k} \operatorname{cov}\left(v_{k}, e_{\mathrm{fc}, k}\right)\left(I+K_{\mathrm{da}, k} C_{k}\right)^{\mathrm{T}} \\
= & \left(I+K_{\mathrm{da}, k} C_{k}\right) P_{\mathrm{fc}, k}\left(I+K_{\mathrm{da}, k} C_{k}\right)^{\mathrm{T}}+K_{\mathrm{da}, k} V_{2, k} K_{\mathrm{da}, k}^{\mathrm{T}} \\
= & P_{\mathrm{fc}, k}+K_{\mathrm{da}, k} C_{k} P_{\mathrm{fc}, k}+P_{\mathrm{fc}, k} C_{k}^{\mathrm{T}} K_{\mathrm{da}, k}^{\mathrm{T}}+K_{\mathrm{da}, k}\left(C_{k} P_{\mathrm{fc}, k} C_{k}^{\mathrm{T}}+V_{2, k}\right) K_{\mathrm{da}, k}^{\mathrm{T}} . \tag{6.33}
\end{align*}
$$

Next, note that

$$
\arg \min _{K_{\mathrm{da}, k}} \mathrm{E}\left(e_{\mathrm{da}, k}^{\mathrm{T}} e_{\mathrm{da}, k}\right)=\arg \min _{K_{\mathrm{da}, k}} \operatorname{tr}\left(P_{\mathrm{da}, k}\right) .
$$

Since the derivative of $P_{\mathrm{da}, k}$ with respect to $K_{\mathrm{da}, k}$ is zero at the minimum value of $\operatorname{tr}\left(P_{\mathrm{da}, k}\right)$ and since $P_{\mathrm{da}, k}$ is a quadratic function of $K_{\mathrm{da}, k}$, it follows that the the optimal state estimator gain that gives the minimal mean square error between the state $x_{k}$ and estimate $x_{\mathrm{da}, k}$ is given by

$$
0=\frac{\partial P_{\mathrm{da}, k}}{\partial K_{\mathrm{da}, k}}=2\left(C_{k} P_{\mathrm{fc}, k}\right)^{\mathrm{T}}+2 K_{\mathrm{da}, k}\left(C_{k} P_{\mathrm{fc}, k} C_{k}^{\mathrm{T}}+V_{2, k}\right),
$$

which implies (6.29). Multiplying both sides of (6.29) by $\left(C_{k} P_{\mathrm{fc}, k} C_{k}^{\mathrm{T}}+V_{2, k}\right) K_{\mathrm{da}, k}^{\mathrm{T}}$ on the right yields

$$
K_{\mathrm{da}, k}\left(C_{k} P_{\mathrm{fc}, k} C_{k}^{\mathrm{T}}+V_{2, k}\right) K_{\mathrm{da}, k}^{\mathrm{T}}=-P_{\mathrm{f}, k} C_{k}^{\mathrm{T}} K_{\mathrm{da}, k}^{\mathrm{T}},
$$

which along with (6.33) implies (6.31).

Note that (6.26) implies that

$$
\begin{align*}
P_{\mathrm{fc}, k+1} & =\operatorname{cov}\left(e_{\mathrm{fc}, k+1}\right)=\operatorname{cov}\left(\bar{A}_{k} e_{\mathrm{fc}, k}+G_{k} e_{d, k}+D_{1, k} w_{k}-\bar{B}_{k} v_{k}\right) \\
& =\bar{A}_{k} P_{\mathrm{fc}, k} \bar{A}_{k}^{\mathrm{T}}+\bar{B}_{k} V_{2, k} \bar{B}_{k}^{\mathrm{T}}+V_{1, k}+\widetilde{V}_{\mathrm{fc}, k}, \tag{6.34}
\end{align*}
$$

where

$$
\begin{equation*}
\widetilde{V}_{\mathrm{fc}, k} \triangleq G_{k} \operatorname{var}\left(e_{d, k}\right) G_{k}^{\mathrm{T}}+\bar{A}_{k} \operatorname{cov}\left(e_{\mathrm{fc}, k}, e_{d, k}\right) G_{k}^{\mathrm{T}}+G_{k} \operatorname{cov}\left(e_{d, k}, e_{\mathrm{fc}, k}\right) \bar{A}_{k}^{\mathrm{T}} \tag{6.35}
\end{equation*}
$$

Similarly, (6.28) implies that

$$
\begin{align*}
P_{\mathrm{da}, k+1} & =\operatorname{cov}\left(e_{\mathrm{da}, k+1}\right)=\operatorname{cov}\left(\widetilde{K}_{k+1} A_{k} e_{\mathrm{da}, k}+\widetilde{K}_{k+1} G_{k} e_{d, k}+\widetilde{K}_{k+1} D_{1, k} w_{k}+K_{\mathrm{da}, k+1} v_{k+1}\right) \\
& =\widetilde{K}_{k+1} A_{k} P_{\mathrm{da}, k} A_{k}^{\mathrm{T}} \widetilde{K}_{k+1}^{\mathrm{T}}+\widetilde{K}_{k+1} V_{1, k} \widetilde{K}_{k+1}^{\mathrm{T}}+K_{\mathrm{da}, k+1} V_{2, k+1} K_{\mathrm{da}, k+1}^{\mathrm{T}}+\widetilde{K}_{k+1} \widetilde{V}_{\mathrm{da}, k} \widetilde{K}_{k+1}^{\mathrm{T}} . \tag{6.36}
\end{align*}
$$

Here (6.34) and (6.36) are alternative update equations for $P_{\mathrm{fc}, k}$ and $P_{\mathrm{da}, k}$.

### 6.5 The Filter $G_{f, k}$

We choose $G_{\mathrm{f}, k}$ to be the FIR filter

$$
\begin{equation*}
G_{\mathrm{f}, k}\left(\mathbf{q}^{-1}\right)=\sum_{i=1}^{n_{\mathrm{f}}} \mathbf{q}^{-i} H_{i, k}, \tag{6.37}
\end{equation*}
$$

where,

$$
H_{i, k} \triangleq \begin{cases}C_{k} G_{k-1}, & k \geq i=1  \tag{6.38}\\ C_{k}\left(\prod_{j=1}^{i-1} \bar{A}_{k-j}\right) G_{k-i}, & k \geq i \geq 2 \\ 0, & i>k\end{cases}
$$

This particular choice for the filter was given in [70] and is observed to be effective in the successful implementation of the RCIE algorithm.

## CHAPTER 7

## Conversion Between LTV State Space Models and LTV Input-Output Models

This chapter gives the construction of LTV state space realizations for LTV input-output models as well as the construction of LTV input-output models for LTV state space models. The decomposition of retrospective performance variable presented in the next chapter use the results in this chapter.

Consider the LTV state space model given by (2.10) and (2.11). Assume that, for all $k \leq 0$, $A_{k}=0, B_{k}=0, C_{k}=0$, and $E_{k}=0$. The solution to (2.10) and (2.11), for all $k \geq 0$, is

$$
\begin{equation*}
y_{k}=C_{k}\left(\prod_{i=1}^{k} A_{k-i}\right) x_{0}+C_{k} \sum_{i=0}^{k-2}\left(\prod_{j=1}^{k-i-1} A_{k-j}\right) B_{i} u_{i}+C_{k} B_{k-1} u_{k-1}+E_{k} u_{k} \tag{7.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\prod_{i=0}^{r} X_{i} \triangleq X_{0} X_{1} \ldots X_{r}$.
In this and all subsequent sections, let $G \in \mathbb{R}\left(\mathbf{q}^{-1}\right)_{\text {prop }}^{p \times m}$ denote the time-domain transfer function of an LTV system, and let $G_{k}$ denote the transfer function at step $k$. Define, for all $k \geq 0$, $n \triangleq \operatorname{McDeg} G_{k}$, and thus it is assumed that the order of a minimal state space model of $G$ is constant. Let, for all $k \geq 0, G_{k}=D_{k}^{-1} N_{k}$, where $D_{k}$ and $N_{k}$ are defined in (2.6) and (2.7). Note that, for all $k<0, D_{1, k}=\cdots=D_{n, k}=N_{0, k}=\cdots=N_{n, k}=0$. The Markov parameters of $G$,
for all $k \geq 0$, are defined as

$$
H_{i, k} \triangleq \begin{cases}E_{k}, & i=0  \tag{7.2}\\ C_{k} B_{k-1}, & k \geq i=1 \\ C_{k} \prod_{j=1}^{i-1} A_{k-j} B_{k-i}, & k \geq i \geq 2 \\ 0, & i>k\end{cases}
$$

Proposition 7.1. Assume that $(A, C)$ is completely observable. Then, for all $k \geq n$, an inputoutput model corresponding to (2.10) and (2.11) is given by (2.5) where, for all $k \geq n$,

$$
\begin{gather*}
N_{i, k}= \begin{cases}H_{0, k}, & i=0, \\
H_{i, k}+\sum_{j=1}^{i} D_{j, k} H_{i-j, k-j}, & 1 \leq i \leq n,\end{cases}  \tag{7.3}\\
{\left[\begin{array}{lll}
D_{n, k} & \cdots & D_{1, k}
\end{array}\right]=-C_{k}\left(\prod_{i=1}^{n} A_{k-i}\right) \mathcal{O}_{k-n}^{\mathrm{L}},} \tag{7.4}
\end{gather*}
$$

and $\mathcal{O}_{k}^{\mathrm{L}}$ is a left inverse of $\mathcal{O}_{k}$.

Proof. Assume that (7.3) and (7.4) hold. Post-multiplying (7.4) by $\mathcal{O}_{k-n}$ yields

$$
\begin{align*}
0 & =\left[\begin{array}{lll}
D_{n, k} & \cdots & D_{1, k}
\end{array}\right] \mathcal{O}_{k-n}+C_{k}\left(\prod_{i=1}^{n} A_{k-i}\right) \\
& =C_{k}\left(\prod_{i=1}^{n} A_{k-i}\right)+D_{1, k} C_{k-1}\left(\prod_{i=2}^{n} A_{k-i}\right)+\cdots+D_{n-1, k} C_{k-n+1} A_{k-n}+D_{n, k} C_{k-n} . \tag{7.5}
\end{align*}
$$

Next, it follows from (2.10) and (2.11) that

$$
y_{k}=C_{k}\left(\prod_{i=1}^{n} A_{k-i}\right) x_{k-n}+C_{k} \sum_{i=0}^{n-2}\left(\prod_{j=1}^{n-i-1} A_{k-j}\right) B_{k-n+i} u_{k-n+i}+C_{k} B_{k-1} u_{k-1}+E_{k} u_{k}
$$

Hence

$$
\begin{align*}
& y_{k}+D_{1, k} y_{k-1}+\cdots+D_{n-1, k} y_{k-n+1}+D_{n, k} y_{k-n} \\
& =C_{k}\left(\prod_{i=1}^{n} A_{k-i}\right) x_{k-n}+C_{k} \sum_{i=0}^{n-2}\left(\prod_{j=1}^{n-i-1} A_{k-j}\right) B_{k-n+i} u_{k-n+i}+C_{k} B_{k-1} u_{k-1}+E_{k} u_{k} \\
& +D_{1, k}\left(C_{k-1}\left(\prod_{i=2}^{n} A_{k-i}\right) x_{k-n}+C_{k-1} \sum_{i=0}^{n-3}\left(\prod_{j=2}^{n-i-1} A_{k-j}\right) B_{k-n+i} u_{k-n+i}+C_{k-1} B_{k-2} u_{k-2}\right. \\
& \left.+E_{k-1} u_{k-1}\right)+\cdots+D_{n-1, k}\left(C_{k-n+1} A_{k-n} x_{k-n}+C_{k-n+1} B_{k-n} u_{k-n}+E_{k-n+1} u_{k-n+1}\right) \\
& +D_{n, k}\left(C_{k-n} x_{k-n}+E_{k-n} u_{k-n}\right) . \tag{7.6}
\end{align*}
$$

Regrouping the terms in (7.6) and using (7.2) yields

$$
\begin{align*}
& y_{k}+D_{1, k} y_{k-1}+\cdots+D_{n-1, k} y_{k-n+1}+D_{n, k} y_{k-n} \\
& =\left(C_{k}\left(\prod_{i=1}^{n} A_{k-i}\right)+D_{1, k} C_{k-1}\left(\prod_{i=2}^{n} A_{k-i}\right)+\cdots+D_{n-1, k} C_{k-n+1} A_{k-n}+D_{n, k} C_{k-n}\right) x_{k-n} \\
& +\left(H_{n, k}+\sum_{j=1}^{n} D_{j, k} H_{n-j, k-j}\right) u_{k-n}+\left(H_{n-1, k}+\sum_{j=1}^{n-1} D_{j, k} H_{n-1-j, k-j}\right) u_{k-n+1}+\ldots \ldots \\
& +\left(H_{1, k}+D_{1, k} H_{0, k-1}\right) u_{k-1}+H_{0, k} u_{k} . \tag{7.7}
\end{align*}
$$

Then, substituting (7.5) and (7.3) in (7.7) gives (2.5).

Proposition 7.2. A completely observable state space model corresponding to the input-output
model in (2.5) is given by (2.10) and (2.11), where, for all $k \geq 0$,

$$
\left.\begin{array}{l}
A_{k}=\left[\begin{array}{cccc}
0 & \cdots & 0 & -D_{n, k+n} \\
I & \cdots & 0 & -D_{n-1, k+n-1} \\
\vdots & \cdots & \vdots & \vdots \\
0 & \cdots & I & -D_{1, k+1}
\end{array}\right], \quad B_{k}=\left[\begin{array}{c}
N_{n, k+n}-D_{n, k+n} N_{0, k} \\
N_{n-1, k+n-1}-D_{n-1, k+n-1} N_{0, k} \\
\vdots \\
N_{1, k+1}-D_{1, k+1} N_{0, k}
\end{array}\right], \\
C_{k}
\end{array}\right]\left[\begin{array}{lll}
0_{p \times p(n-1)} & I_{p} \tag{7.9}
\end{array}\right], \quad E_{k}=N_{0, k} . \quad .
$$

Furthermore, $x_{k}=\left[\begin{array}{llll}x_{1, k}^{\mathrm{T}} & x_{2, k}^{\mathrm{T}} & \cdots & x_{n, k}^{\mathrm{T}}\end{array}\right]^{\mathrm{T}}$, where, for all $i=0, \ldots, n-1$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
x_{n-i, k}=\sum_{j=i+1}^{n} N_{j, k+i} u_{k-j+i}-\sum_{j=i+1}^{n} D_{j, k+i} y_{k-j+i} . \tag{7.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. Assume that (7.8), (7.9), and (7.10) hold. Rearranging terms in (2.5) yields

$$
\begin{equation*}
y_{k}=\sum_{j=1}^{n} N_{j, k} u_{k-j}-\sum_{j=1}^{n} D_{j, k} y_{k-j}+N_{0, k} u_{k} . \tag{7.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

Substituting $i=0$ in (7.10) yields

$$
x_{n, k}=\sum_{j=1}^{n} N_{j, k} u_{k-j}-\sum_{j=1}^{n} D_{j, k} y_{k-j},
$$

which along with (7.11) implies that

$$
\begin{equation*}
x_{n, k}=y_{k}-N_{0, k} u_{k} . \tag{7.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

Next, substituting $i=n-1$ in (7.10) yields

$$
\begin{equation*}
x_{1, k}=N_{n, k+n-1} u_{k-1}-D_{n, k+n-1} y_{k-1} . \tag{7.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

Hence it follows from (7.12) and (7.13) that

$$
\begin{align*}
x_{1, k+1} & =N_{n, k+n} u_{k}-D_{n, k+n} y_{k}=-D_{n, k+n}\left(y_{k}-N_{0, k} u_{k}\right)+\left(N_{n, k+n}-D_{n, k+n} N_{0, k}\right) u_{k} \\
& =-D_{n, k+n} x_{n, k}+\left(N_{n, k+n}-D_{n, k+n} N_{0, k}\right) u_{k} . \tag{7.14}
\end{align*}
$$

Furthermore, for all $i=0, \ldots, n-2$, (7.10) and (7.12) imply that

$$
\begin{align*}
x_{n-i, k+1} & =\sum_{j=i+1}^{n} N_{j, k+i+1} u_{k-j+i+1}-\sum_{j=i+1}^{n} D_{j, k+i+1} y_{k-j+i+1} \\
& =\sum_{j=i+2}^{n} N_{j, k+i+1} u_{k-j+i+1}-\sum_{j=i+2}^{n} D_{j, k+i+1} y_{k-j+i+1}+N_{i+1, k+i+1} u_{k}-D_{i+1, k+i+1} y_{k} \\
& =x_{n-i-1, k}+N_{i+1, k+i+1} u_{k}-D_{i+1, k+i+1} y_{k} \\
& =x_{n-i-1, k}-D_{i+1, k+i+1}\left(y_{k}-N_{0, k} u_{k}\right)+\left(N_{i+1, k+i+1}-D_{i+1, k+i+1} N_{0, k}\right) u_{k} \\
& =x_{n-i-1, k}-D_{i+1, k+i+1} x_{n, k}+\left(N_{i+1, k+i+1}-D_{i+1, k+i+1} N_{0, k}\right) u_{k} \tag{7.15}
\end{align*}
$$

Hence, it follows from (7.8), (7.14) and (7.15) that

$$
\begin{aligned}
& A_{k} x_{k}+B_{k} u_{k} \\
& =\left[\begin{array}{c}
-D_{n, k+n} x_{n, k} \\
x_{1, k}-D_{n-1, k+n-1} x_{n, k} \\
\vdots \\
x_{n-1, k}-D_{1, k+1} x_{n, k}
\end{array}\right]+\left[\begin{array}{c}
N_{n, k+n}-D_{n, k+n} N_{0, k} \\
N_{n-1, k+n-1}-D_{n-1, k+n-1} N_{0, k} \\
\vdots \\
N_{1, k+1}-D_{1, k+1} N_{0, k}
\end{array}\right] u_{k}=\left[\begin{array}{c}
x_{1, k+1} \\
x_{2, k+1} \\
\vdots \\
x_{n, k+1}
\end{array}\right]=x_{k+1} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Finally, it follows from (7.9) and (7.12) that

$$
\begin{equation*}
C_{k} x_{k}+E_{k} u_{k}=x_{n, k}+N_{0, k} u_{k}=y_{k} . \tag{7.16}
\end{equation*}
$$

Since, for all $k \geq 0, \operatorname{rank} \mathcal{O}_{k}=n$ for $A_{k}$ and $C_{k}$ as defined in (7.8) and (7.9), it follows that $(A, C)$ is completely observable.

## CHAPTER 8

## Decomposition of Retrospective Performance Variable in RCIE

In this chapter, in order to obtain a better understanding of the underlying mechanism and the performance of RCIE, a decomposition of the retrospective performance variable into the sum of a performance term and a model-matching term is presented. Since this decomposition involves time-varying input-output models, the results on conversion between LTV state space models and LTV input-output models given in the previous chapter are used here. Analysis of the decomposition shows how RCIE avoids convergence to an estimator that is destabilizing or has poor performance. A numerical example is used to illustrate the derived results and observations.

Define the virtual external input perturbation for RCIE as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\widetilde{d}_{k}\left(\theta_{k+1}\right) \triangleq \hat{d}_{k}-\Phi_{k} \theta_{k+1} \tag{8.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

Let $\widetilde{d}_{\mathrm{f}, k}\left(\theta_{k+1}\right)$ be given by the FIA filter

$$
\begin{equation*}
\widetilde{d}_{\mathrm{f}, k}\left(\theta_{k+1}\right)=G_{\mathrm{f}, k}\left(\mathbf{q}^{-1}\right) \widetilde{d}_{k}\left(\theta_{\overline{k+1}}\right) . \tag{8.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

Note that $\widetilde{d}_{\mathrm{f}, k}\left(\theta_{k+1}\right)$ ignores the changes in the argument $\theta_{k+1}$ of $\widetilde{d}_{k}$ over the interval $\left[k-n_{\mathrm{f}}, k\right]$ in
accordance with retrospective optimization. Using (8.2), (6.17) can be written as

$$
\begin{equation*}
z_{\mathrm{rc}, k}\left(\theta_{k+1}\right)=z_{k}-\widetilde{d}_{\mathrm{f}, k}\left(\theta_{k+1}\right) \tag{8.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

The following matrices are used in Theorem 3.1.

$$
\begin{align*}
& \hat{A}_{k} \triangleq\left[\begin{array}{cccc}
0 & \cdots & 0 & P_{n_{c}, k+n_{c}+1} \\
I & \cdots & 0 & P_{n_{c}-1, k+n_{c}} \\
\vdots & \cdots & \vdots & \vdots \\
0 & \cdots & I & P_{1, k+2}
\end{array}\right], \quad \hat{G} \triangleq\left[\begin{array}{c}
I \\
0 \\
\vdots \\
0
\end{array}\right] \in \mathbb{R}^{l_{d} n_{\mathrm{c}} \times l_{d}},  \tag{8.4}\\
& \hat{B}_{k} \triangleq\left[\begin{array}{c}
Q_{n_{\mathrm{c}}, k+n_{\mathrm{c}}+1}+P_{n_{\mathrm{c}}, k+n_{\mathrm{c}}+1} Q_{0, k+1} \\
Q_{n_{\mathrm{c}}-1, k+n_{\mathrm{c}}}+P_{n_{\mathrm{c}}-1, k+n_{\mathrm{c}}} Q_{0, k+1} \\
\vdots \\
Q_{1, k+2}+P_{1, k+2} Q_{0, k+1}
\end{array}\right],  \tag{8.5}\\
& \hat{C} \triangleq\left[\begin{array}{llll}
0 & \cdots & 0 & I
\end{array}\right] \in \mathbb{R}^{l_{d} \times l_{d} n_{c}}, \quad \hat{D}_{k} \triangleq Q_{0, k+1},  \tag{8.6}\\
& B_{\mathrm{a}, k} \triangleq\left[\begin{array}{lll}
G_{k} & D_{1, k} & -\bar{B}_{k}
\end{array}\right], \quad D_{\mathrm{a}} \triangleq\left[\begin{array}{lll}
0_{l_{y} \times l_{d}} & 0_{l_{y} \times l_{w}} & -I_{l_{y}}
\end{array}\right],  \tag{8.7}\\
& \widetilde{A}_{k} \triangleq\left[\begin{array}{cc}
\hat{A}_{k} & \hat{B}_{k} C_{k} \\
-G_{k} \hat{C} & \bar{A}_{k}-G_{k} \hat{D}_{k} C_{k}
\end{array}\right], \quad \widetilde{B}_{k} \triangleq\left[\begin{array}{cc}
\hat{G} & \hat{B}_{k} D_{\mathrm{a}} \\
0 & B_{\mathrm{a}, k}-G_{k} \hat{D}_{k} D_{\mathrm{a}}
\end{array}\right],  \tag{8.8}\\
& \widetilde{C}_{k} \triangleq\left[\begin{array}{ll}
0 & C_{k}
\end{array}\right], \quad \widetilde{D} \triangleq\left[\begin{array}{ll}
0 & D_{\mathrm{a}}
\end{array}\right] . \tag{8.9}
\end{align*}
$$

The following result presents the retrospective performance variable decomposition, which shows that the retrospective performance variable is a combination of the closed-loop performance and the extent to which the updated closed-loop transfer function from $\widetilde{d}_{k}\left(\theta_{k+1}\right)$ to $z_{k}$ matches the filter $G_{\mathrm{f}, k}$. Henceforth, $G_{\mathrm{f}, k}$ is called the target model since it serves as the target for the closedloop transfer function from $\widetilde{d}_{k}\left(\theta_{k+1}\right)$ to $z_{k}$.

Theorem 8.1. For all $k \geq 0$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
z_{\mathrm{rc}, k}\left(\theta_{k+1}\right)=z_{\mathrm{pp}, k}\left(\theta_{k+1}\right)+z_{\mathrm{mm}, k}\left(\theta_{k+1}\right), \tag{8.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

where the performance term $z_{\mathrm{pp}, k}\left(\theta_{k+1}\right)$ and the model-matching term $z_{\mathrm{mm}, k}\left(\theta_{k+1}\right)$ are defined as

$$
\begin{align*}
z_{\mathrm{pp}, k}\left(\theta_{k+1}\right) & \triangleq G_{z \bar{u}, k}\left(\mathbf{q}^{-1}\right) \bar{u}_{k}  \tag{8.11}\\
z_{\mathrm{mm}, k}\left(\theta_{k+1}\right) & \triangleq G_{z \widetilde{d}, k}\left(\mathbf{q}^{-1}\right) \widetilde{d}_{k}\left(\theta_{k+1}\right)-G_{\mathrm{f}, k}\left(\mathbf{q}^{-1}\right) \widetilde{d}_{k}\left(\theta_{\overline{k+1}}\right), \tag{8.12}
\end{align*}
$$

and $\bar{u}_{k} \triangleq\left[\begin{array}{ccc}d_{k}^{\mathrm{T}} & w_{k}^{\mathrm{T}} & v_{k}^{\mathrm{T}}\end{array}\right]^{\mathrm{T}}$. The time-domain transfer functions $G_{z \widetilde{d}, k} \in \mathbb{R}\left(\mathbf{q}^{-1}\right)_{\text {prop }}^{l_{y} \times l_{d}}$ and $G_{z \bar{u}, k} \in$ $\mathbb{R}\left(\mathbf{q}^{-1}\right)_{\text {prop }}^{l_{y} \times\left(l_{d}+l_{w}+l_{y}\right)}$ are given by

$$
\left[\begin{array}{ll}
G_{z \widetilde{d}, k} & G_{z \bar{u}, k} \tag{8.13}
\end{array}\right] \triangleq G_{z \widetilde{u}, k}
$$

where $G_{z \widetilde{u}, k}$ is the time-domain transfer function of the system represented by the state space model

$$
\begin{align*}
\widetilde{x}_{k+1} & =\widetilde{A}_{k} \widetilde{x}_{k}+\widetilde{B}_{k} \widetilde{u}_{k}  \tag{8.14}\\
z_{k} & =\widetilde{C}_{k} \widetilde{x}_{k}+\widetilde{D} \widetilde{u}_{k} \tag{8.15}
\end{align*}
$$

$\widetilde{u}_{k} \triangleq\left[\begin{array}{ll}\widetilde{d}_{k}^{\mathrm{T}}\left(\theta_{k+1}\right) & \bar{u}_{k}^{\mathrm{T}}\end{array}\right]^{\mathrm{T}}, \widetilde{x}_{0} \triangleq\left[\begin{array}{ll}0_{1 \times l_{d} n_{\mathrm{c}}} & \left(x_{0}-x_{\mathrm{fc}, 0}\right)^{\mathrm{T}}\end{array}\right]^{\mathrm{T}}$, and $\widetilde{A}_{k}, \widetilde{B}_{k}, \widetilde{C}_{k}$, and $\widetilde{D}$ are defined in (8.8) and (8.9).

Proof. Note that (6.2), (6.4), and (6.5) imply that

$$
\begin{equation*}
z_{k}=C_{k} e_{\mathrm{ff}, k}-v_{k} . \tag{8.16}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then, (6.26) and (8.16) can be written as

$$
\begin{align*}
e_{\mathrm{fc}, k+1} & =\bar{A}_{k} e_{\mathrm{fc}, k}+B_{\mathrm{a}, k} \bar{u}_{k}-G_{k} \hat{d}_{k}  \tag{8.17}\\
z_{k} & =C_{k} e_{\mathrm{fc}, k}+D_{\mathrm{a}} \bar{u}_{k} \tag{8.18}
\end{align*}
$$

where $B_{\mathrm{a}, k}$ and $D_{\mathrm{a}}$ are defined in (8.7). Next, it follows from (6.6) that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Phi_{k} \theta_{k+1}=\sum_{i=1}^{n_{\mathrm{c}}} P_{i, k+1} \hat{d}_{k-i}+\sum_{i=0}^{n_{\mathrm{c}}} Q_{i, k+1} z_{k-i} . \tag{8.19}
\end{equation*}
$$

Substituting (8.19) in (8.1) yields

$$
\begin{equation*}
\hat{d}_{k}=\widetilde{d}_{k}\left(\theta_{k+1}\right)+\sum_{i=1}^{n_{\mathrm{c}}} P_{i, k+1} \hat{d}_{k-i}+\sum_{i=0}^{n_{\mathrm{c}}} Q_{i, k+1} z_{k-i} . \tag{8.20}
\end{equation*}
$$

Using (6.12) and (6.13), it follows from (8.20) that

$$
\hat{d}_{k}=\widetilde{d}_{k}\left(\theta_{k+1}\right)+\hat{d}_{k}-D_{\hat{d} z, k+1}\left(\mathbf{q}^{-1}\right) \hat{d}_{k}+N_{\hat{d} z, k+1}\left(\mathbf{q}^{-1}\right) z_{k}
$$

which, using (6.11), can be rewritten as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\hat{d}_{k}=D_{\hat{d} z, k+1}^{-1}\left(\mathbf{q}^{-1}\right) \widetilde{d}_{k}\left(\theta_{k+1}\right)+G_{\hat{d} z, k+1}\left(\mathbf{q}^{-1}\right) z_{k} . \tag{8.21}
\end{equation*}
$$

Note that (6.12), (6.13), and Proposition 7.2 imply that a state space model corresponding to (8.21) is given by

$$
\begin{align*}
\hat{x}_{k+1} & =\hat{A}_{k} \hat{x}_{k}+\hat{G} \widetilde{d}_{k}\left(\theta_{k+1}\right)+\hat{B}_{k} z_{k},  \tag{8.22}\\
\hat{d}_{k} & =\hat{C} \hat{x}_{k}+\hat{D}_{k} z_{k}, \tag{8.23}
\end{align*}
$$

where $\hat{A}_{k}, \hat{G}, \hat{B}_{k}, \hat{C}$, and $\hat{D}_{k}$ are defined in (8.4), (8.5), and (8.6), and $\hat{x}_{0} \triangleq 0_{l_{d} n_{\mathrm{c}} \times 1}$. Substituting
(8.23) and (8.18) in (8.17) yields

$$
\begin{equation*}
e_{\mathrm{fc}, k+1}=\left(\bar{A}_{k}-G_{k} \hat{D}_{k} C_{k}\right) e_{\mathrm{fc}, k}-G_{k} \hat{C} \hat{x}_{k}+\left(B_{\mathrm{a}, k}-G_{k} \hat{D}_{k} D_{\mathrm{a}}\right) \bar{u}_{k}, \tag{8.24}
\end{equation*}
$$

Similarly, substituting (8.18) in (8.22) yields

$$
\begin{equation*}
\hat{x}_{k+1}=\hat{A}_{k} \hat{x}_{k}+\hat{B}_{k} C_{k} e_{\mathrm{fc}, k}+\hat{G} \widetilde{d}_{k}\left(\theta_{k+1}\right)+\hat{B}_{k} D_{\mathrm{a}} \bar{u}_{k} . \tag{8.25}
\end{equation*}
$$

Define $\widetilde{x}_{k} \triangleq\left[\begin{array}{ll}\hat{x}_{k}^{\mathrm{T}} & e_{\mathrm{fc}, k}^{\mathrm{T}}\end{array}\right]^{\mathrm{T}}$. Thus, (8.14) and (8.15) follow from (8.24), (8.25), and (8.18). Since $G_{z \widetilde{u}, k}$ is the time-domain transfer function of the system represented by (8.14) and (8.15), it follows from (8.13) that

$$
\begin{equation*}
z_{k}=G_{z \bar{u}, k}\left(\mathbf{q}^{-1}\right) \bar{u}_{k}+G_{z \widetilde{d}, k}\left(\mathbf{q}^{-1}\right) \widetilde{d}_{k}\left(\theta_{k+1}\right) \tag{8.26}
\end{equation*}
$$

Finally, substituting (8.26) in (8.3) yields (8.10).

Note that the expression for $G_{z \widetilde{u}, k}$ is obtained using (8.8) and (8.9) in accordance with Definition 2.20 and Proposition 7.1. In order to use Proposition 7.1, (8.14) and (8.15) must be converted to a completely observable state space model. The time-varying Eigensystem Realization Algorithm explained in Section IV of [127] provides a method to reduce any given LTV state space model to a minimal state space model.

Proposition 8.2. Assume that $\lim _{k \rightarrow \infty} \theta_{k}$ exists and $\Phi_{k}$ is bounded. Then $\lim _{k \rightarrow \infty} \widetilde{d}_{k}\left(\theta_{k+1}\right)=0$.
Proof. Equations (6.7) and (8.1) imply that

$$
\widetilde{d}_{k}\left(\theta_{k+1}\right)=\hat{d}_{k}-\Phi_{k} \theta_{k+1}=\Phi_{k}\left(\theta_{k}-\theta_{k+1}\right)
$$

Defining $\alpha \triangleq \sup _{k \geq 0} \sigma_{\text {max }}\left(\Phi_{k}\right)$, where $\sigma_{\max }$ denotes the maximum singular value, it follows that

$$
\left\|\widetilde{d}_{k}\left(\theta_{k+1}\right)\right\| \leq \sigma_{\max }\left(\Phi_{k}\right)\left\|\theta_{k}-\theta_{k+1}\right\|=\alpha\left\|\theta_{k}-\theta_{k+1}\right\| .
$$

Hence,

$$
\lim _{k \rightarrow \infty}\left\|\widetilde{d}_{k}\left(\theta_{k+1}\right)\right\| \leq \alpha \lim _{k \rightarrow \infty}\left\|\theta_{k}-\theta_{k+1}\right\|=0
$$

and thus $\lim _{k \rightarrow \infty} \widetilde{d}_{k}\left(\theta_{k+1}\right)=0$.

In order to analyze the retrospective performance variable decomposition, assume that $R_{z}=I$, and $\lambda=1$. Then, it follows from (6.18) and (8.10) that

$$
\begin{align*}
& J_{k}\left(\theta_{k+1}\right)=\sum_{i=0}^{k}\left(z_{\mathrm{pp}, i}^{\mathrm{T}}\left(\theta_{i+1}\right) z_{\mathrm{pp}, i}\left(\theta_{i+1}\right)+z_{\mathrm{mm}, i}^{\mathrm{T}}\left(\theta_{i+1}\right) z_{\mathrm{mm}, i}\left(\theta_{i+1}\right)+2 z_{\mathrm{pp}, i}^{\mathrm{T}}\left(\theta_{i+1}\right) z_{\mathrm{mm}, i}\left(\theta_{i+1}\right)\right. \\
& \left.+\theta_{i+1}^{\mathrm{T}} \Phi_{i}^{\mathrm{T}} R_{d} \Phi_{i} \theta_{i+1}\right)+\left(\theta_{k+1}-\theta_{0}\right)^{\mathrm{T}} R_{\theta}\left(\theta_{k+1}-\theta_{0}\right) \tag{8.27}
\end{align*}
$$

Note that the first two terms in the sum are nonnegative, whereas the third term can have arbitrary sign. This suggests that RLS can minimize $J_{k}\left(\theta_{k+1}\right)$ by making the third term negative while the nonnegative terms remain large. In the case where $R_{\theta}$ and $R_{d}$ are small, using RLS to minimize (8.27) yields, for $k \geq k_{0} \in \mathbb{R}$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
z_{\mathrm{rc}, k}\left(\theta_{k+1}\right) \approx 0, \tag{8.28}
\end{equation*}
$$

which, using (8.10), implies that

$$
\begin{equation*}
z_{\mathrm{pp}, k}\left(\theta_{k+1}\right) \approx-z_{\mathrm{mm}, k}\left(\theta_{k+1}\right) \tag{8.29}
\end{equation*}
$$

Example 8.3. Consider the state space model given by (6.1), (6.2), where, for all $k \geq 0$,

$$
\begin{align*}
& A_{k} \triangleq\left[\begin{array}{cc}
0 & 1 \\
(0.9)^{k+1} & (0.5)^{k+1}
\end{array}\right], \quad G_{k}=G \triangleq\left[\begin{array}{l}
0 \\
1
\end{array}\right]  \tag{8.30}\\
& C_{k}=C \triangleq\left[\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 1.1
\end{array}\right], \quad D_{2, k}=D_{2} \triangleq 0.01 \tag{8.31}
\end{align*}
$$

$u_{k}=w_{k}=0, v_{k}$ is standard Gaussian white noise, and $x_{0}=\left[\begin{array}{ll}0.2 & 0.2\end{array}\right]^{\mathrm{T}}$. Let $n_{\mathrm{c}}=6, n_{\mathrm{f}}=$ $2, \lambda=1, R_{\theta}=10^{-4} I_{13}, R_{d}=10^{-6}, R_{z}=1, \widetilde{V}=10^{-2} I_{2}$, and let the unknown input be $d_{k}=$ $1+\sin (0.3 k)$.

Plots (a) and (b) in Figure 8.1 show that, after an initial finite number of steps, (8.28) and (8.29) hold true. Plot (c) in Figure 8.1 shows that the difference between $z_{\mathrm{rc}}$ and $z_{\mathrm{pp}}+z_{\mathrm{mm}}$ is negligible, and thus confirms (8.10). The convergence of $\hat{d}, \theta$, and $\widetilde{d}$ is depicted in Figure 8.2. Note that, in these plots, the time step at which the RCIE algorithm is started is assumed as the 0 -th step. In order to observe the steady-state behavior of the time-domain transfer functions $G_{z \bar{u}}$ and $G_{z \widetilde{d}}$ after the estimator coefficient $\theta$ converges, the magnitude plots of $G_{z d, 200}, G_{z w, 200}$, and $G_{z v, 200}$ are shown in Figure 8.3, where $\left[\begin{array}{lll}G_{z d, 200} & G_{z w, 200} & G_{z v, 200}\end{array}\right]=G_{z \bar{u}, 200}$, and the extent to which the frequency response of $G_{z \widetilde{d}, 200}$ matches with that of $G_{\mathrm{f}, 200}$ is shown in Figure 8.4.


Figure 8.1: (a) For all $k \geq 21, z_{\mathrm{rc}, k} \approx 0$, which confirms (8.28). (b) For all $k \geq 21, z_{\mathrm{pp}, k} \approx z_{\mathrm{mm}, k}$, which confirms (8.29). Furthermore, for all $k \geq 35, z_{\mathrm{pp}, k} \approx z_{\mathrm{mm}, k} \approx 0$. (c) For all $k \geq 0$, $\left|z_{\mathrm{rc}, k}-\left(z_{\mathrm{pp}, k}+z_{\mathrm{mm}, k}\right)\right| \leq 3 \times 10^{-14}$, which confirms (8.10).


Figure 8.2: (a) After the initial transient period of about 25 steps, $\hat{d}$ follows $d$. (b) The estimator coefficients $\theta$ converges after about 25 steps. (c) The virtual external input perturbation $\widetilde{d}$ converges to zero after about 25 steps, in accordance with Proposition 8.2.


Figure 8.3: The magnitudes of $G_{z w, 200}$ and $G_{z v, 200}$ are close to zero at all frequencies. The magnitude of $G_{z d, 200}$ at the frequencies 0 and $0.3 \mathrm{rad} /$ step contained in the spectrum of the unknown input signal $d$ is close to zero. These observations confirm that, for large values of $k, z_{\mathrm{pp}, k} \approx 0$.


Figure 8.4: Comparison of the frequency response of $G_{z \widetilde{d}, 200}$ with that of $G_{f, 200}$. The magnitude plots and the phase plots match approximately.

## CHAPTER 9

## Causal Numerical Differentiation

The ability to control a system is often enhanced by feeding back the derivatives of sensor signals, such as estimates of velocity and acceleration when only position is measured. Within this context, signal differentiation must be performed causally, that is, using only current and past data and with minimal computational latency. This chapter formulates causal ${ }^{1}$ numerical differentiation as a sampled-data input-estimation problem, where the plant is a cascade of integrators. Using backward-difference differentiation (BDD) as a baseline comparison, high-gain observers (HGO) with bilinear discretization and retrospective cost input estimation are applied to harmonic signals under various noise levels for single and double differentiation. These methods are then applied to experimental position data of a small rover for estimating its velocity and acceleration. Neither method uses information about the noise statistics, and no analog or digital filtering is used for noise suppression.

### 9.1 Differentiation using RCIE

Since the objective is to use RCIE as a differentiator, the system given by (6.1) and (6.2) is modeled as the discrete-time equivalent of an integrator. Thus, the measured output $y(t)$ is an integral of the unknown input $d(t)$ or, in other words, the unknown input $d(t)$ is the derivative of the measured output $y(t)$. Hence, by applying RCIE and reconstructing $\hat{d}$ from the estimates $\hat{d}_{k}$,

[^0]we are estimating the derivative of the measured output $y$. Note that the concept of process noise is not applicable when the system is modeled as an integrator. Hence, for the rest of this chapter, it is assumed that $w=0$, and thus $D_{1}=0$.

Consider the $n$-th order integrator dynamics

$$
\begin{align*}
\dot{x} & =A_{\mathrm{I}} x+B_{\mathrm{I}} y^{(n)}, \quad y=C_{\mathrm{I}} x,  \tag{9.1}\\
A_{\mathrm{I}} & \triangleq\left[\begin{array}{cc}
0_{(n-1) \times 1} & I_{n-1} \\
0 & 0_{1 \times(n-1)}
\end{array}\right], \quad B_{\mathrm{I}} \triangleq\left[\begin{array}{c}
0_{(n-1) \times 1} \\
1
\end{array}\right]  \tag{9.2}\\
C_{\mathrm{I}} & \triangleq\left[\begin{array}{cc}
1 & 0_{1 \times(n-1)}
\end{array}\right] \tag{9.3}
\end{align*}
$$

where $x, y \in \mathbb{R}$, and $y^{(n)}$ is the $n$-th derivative of $y$. The discretization of (9.1) using zero-hold results in the discrete-time state space model given by

$$
\begin{align*}
& x_{k+1}=A_{\mathrm{d}} x_{k}+B_{\mathrm{d}} y_{k}^{(n)}, \quad y_{k}=C_{\mathrm{I}} x_{k},  \tag{9.4}\\
& A_{\mathrm{d}} \triangleq e^{A_{\mathrm{I}} T_{\mathrm{s}}}, \quad B_{\mathrm{d}} \triangleq \int_{0}^{T_{\mathrm{s}}} e^{A_{\mathrm{I}}(t-\tau)} B_{\mathrm{I}} d \tau, \tag{9.5}
\end{align*}
$$

where $x_{k} \triangleq x\left(k T_{\mathrm{s}}\right), y_{k} \triangleq y\left(k T_{\mathrm{s}}\right), y_{k}^{(n)} \triangleq y^{(n)}\left(k T_{\mathrm{s}}\right)$, and $T_{\mathrm{s}}$ is the sampling time. Setting $A=A_{\mathrm{d}}$, $B=B_{\mathrm{d}}$, and $C=C_{\mathrm{I}}$ in (6.1) and (6.2), and applying RCIE gives an estimate $\left(\hat{y}^{(n)}=\hat{d}\right)$ of $y^{(n)}$. Note that $A_{\mathrm{d}}=1, B_{\mathrm{d}}=T_{\mathrm{s}}$, and $C_{\mathrm{I}}=1$ in the case of single differentiation, and

$$
A_{\mathrm{d}}=\left[\begin{array}{cc}
1 & T_{\mathrm{s}}  \tag{9.6}\\
0 & 1
\end{array}\right], \quad B_{\mathrm{d}}=\left[\begin{array}{c}
\frac{1}{2} T_{\mathrm{s}}^{2} \\
T_{\mathrm{s}}
\end{array}\right], \quad C_{\mathrm{I}}=\left[\begin{array}{cc}
1 & 0
\end{array}\right]
$$

in the case of double differentiation.

### 9.2 Differentiation using HGO

The discrete-time implementation of casual differentiation using HGO was done in [108] and the same is explained here. A state space model for a high-gain observer designed for the system represented by (9.1) is given by

$$
\begin{align*}
& \dot{\hat{x}}=A_{\mathrm{co}} \hat{x}+B_{\mathrm{co}} y, \quad \hat{y}=C_{\mathrm{o}} \hat{x}  \tag{9.7}\\
& A_{\mathrm{co}} \triangleq A_{\mathrm{I}}-H C_{\mathrm{I}}, \quad C_{\mathrm{o}} \triangleq\left[\begin{array}{ll}
0_{(n-1) \times 1} & I_{n-1}
\end{array}\right],  \tag{9.8}\\
& B_{\mathrm{co}}=H \triangleq\left[\begin{array}{llll}
\frac{\alpha_{1}}{\varepsilon} & \frac{\alpha_{2}}{\varepsilon^{2}} & \cdots & \frac{\alpha_{n}}{\varepsilon^{n}}
\end{array}\right]^{\mathrm{T}}, \tag{9.9}
\end{align*}
$$

where $\varepsilon$ is a small positive parameter, and $\alpha_{1}, \alpha_{2}, \ldots, \alpha_{n}$ are constants chosen such that the polynomial

$$
\begin{equation*}
p(s) \triangleq s^{n}+\alpha_{1} s^{n-1}+\cdots+\alpha_{n-1} s+\alpha_{n} \tag{9.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

is Hurwitz. The transfer function from $y$ to $\hat{y}$ is given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
G(s)=C_{\mathrm{o}}\left(s I-A_{\mathrm{I}}+H C_{\mathrm{I}}\right)^{-1} H=D_{G}^{-1}(s) N_{G}(s), \tag{9.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

where

$$
\begin{equation*}
D_{G}(s) \triangleq \varepsilon^{n} s^{n}+\alpha_{1} \varepsilon^{n-1} s^{n-1}+\cdots+\alpha_{n-1} \varepsilon s+\alpha_{n} \tag{9.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

$$
N_{G}(s) \triangleq\left[\begin{array}{c}
\alpha_{2} \varepsilon^{n-2} s^{n-1}+\cdots+\alpha_{n-1} \varepsilon s^{2}+\alpha_{n} s  \tag{9.13}\\
\alpha_{3} \varepsilon^{n-3} s^{n-1}+\cdots+\alpha_{n-1} \varepsilon s^{3}+\alpha_{n} s^{2} \\
\vdots \\
\alpha_{n-1} \varepsilon s^{n-1}+\alpha_{n} s^{n-2} \\
\alpha_{n} s^{n-1}
\end{array}\right] .
$$

Let

$$
\begin{align*}
& \hat{x}=\left[\begin{array}{llll}
\hat{x}_{1} & \hat{x}_{2} & \ldots & \hat{x}_{n}
\end{array}\right]^{\mathrm{T}}  \tag{9.14}\\
& \hat{y}=\left[\begin{array}{llll}
\hat{y}^{(1)} & \hat{y}^{(2)} & \ldots & \hat{y}^{(n-1)}
\end{array}\right]^{\mathrm{T}} \tag{9.15}
\end{align*}
$$

Since

$$
\lim _{\varepsilon \rightarrow 0} G(s)=\left[\begin{array}{llll}
s & \cdots & s^{n-2} & s^{n-1} \tag{9.16}
\end{array}\right]^{\mathrm{T}}
$$

it follows that, for all $i=1, \ldots, n-1, \hat{y}^{(i)}$ is an approximation of $y^{(i)}$. Let the discrete-time observer state space model obtained by using bilinear transformation on (9.7) be

$$
\begin{equation*}
\hat{x}_{k+1}=A_{\mathrm{do}} \hat{x}_{k}+B_{\mathrm{do}} y_{k}, \quad \hat{y}_{k}=C_{\mathrm{o}} \hat{x}_{k} . \tag{9.17}
\end{equation*}
$$

Thus, the implementation of (9.17) gives the estimates $\left(\hat{y}^{(1)}, \hat{y}^{(2)}, \ldots, \hat{y}^{(n-1)}\right)$ of $y^{(1)}, y^{(2)}, \ldots, y^{(n-1)}$.

### 9.3 Differentiation using BDD

The single derivative backward-difference differentiator is given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
G_{\mathrm{sd}}(\mathrm{z}) \triangleq \frac{\mathrm{z}-1}{T_{\mathrm{s}} \mathrm{z}} \tag{9.18}
\end{equation*}
$$

The double derivative backward-difference differentiator is given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
G_{\mathrm{dd}}(\mathrm{z}) \triangleq \frac{(\mathrm{z}-1)^{2}}{\left(T_{\mathrm{s}} \mathrm{z}\right)^{2}} \tag{9.19}
\end{equation*}
$$

### 9.4 Numerical Examples

In this section, numerical examples are given to illustrate the accuracy of RCIE and HGO as differentiators. BDD will be used as a baseline for comparison. Note that the examples will deal with discrete-time signals only.

## Example 9.1. Differentiation in the Absence of Noise.

In this example, it is assumed that there is no output noise, and hence $v \equiv 0$. Let the measured output be $y_{k}=\sin (0.2 k)$.

## Single Differentiation (SD)

In the case of RCIE, let $n_{\mathrm{c}}=1, n_{\mathrm{f}}=6, R_{\theta}=10^{-3} I_{3}, R_{d}=10^{-5}, R_{z}=1, \widetilde{V}=10^{-4}$. In the case of HGO, let $n=3$ in (9.1), (9.2), and (9.3), let $\alpha_{1}=3, \alpha_{2}=3, \alpha_{3}=1$. Note that choosing $n=3$ gave slightly better estimate of the first derivative as compared to choosing $n=2$. The parameter $\varepsilon$ is chosen as the value between 0.01 and 2 that gives the lowest root mean square error (RMSE) between the estimated values and the true values. Figure 9.1 compares the signals estimated by SD/RCIE, SD/HGO, and SD/BDD with the true first derivative.

## Double Differentiation (DD)

In the case of RCIE, let $n_{\mathrm{c}}=18, n_{\mathrm{f}}=4, R_{\theta}=10^{-1} I_{37}, R_{d}=10^{-6}, R_{z}=1, \widetilde{V}=10^{-5}$. In the case of HGO, let $n=4$ in (9.1), (9.2), and (9.3), let $\alpha_{1}=8, \alpha_{2}=24, \alpha_{3}=32, \alpha_{4}=16$. Note that choosing $n=4$ gave slightly better estimate for the second derivative as compared to choosing $n=3$. The parameter $\varepsilon$ is chosen in the same way as chosen for single differentiation. Figure


Figure 9.1: Example 9.1 Single Differentiation. (a) The signals estimated by SD/RCIE and SD/HGO follow the true first derivative $y^{(1)}$ after about 20 steps, whereas the signal estimated by SD/BDD follows $y^{(1)}$ without a transient period. (b) A zoomed view of plot (a). At steady state, $\mathrm{SD} / \mathrm{HGO}$ is more accurate than SD/RCIE and SD/BDD.
9.2 compares the signals estimated by DD/RCIE, DD/HGO, and DD/BDD with the true second derivative.

Example 9.2. Differentiation in the Presence of Noise.
This example considers differentiation in the presence of output noise. Let the measured output be $y_{k}=\sin (0.2 k)+D_{2} v_{k}$, where $v$ is standard Gaussian white noise.

## Single Differentiation

In the case of RCIE, let $n_{\mathrm{c}}=1, n_{\mathrm{f}}=6, R_{\theta}=10^{-6} I_{3}, R_{d}=10^{-5}, R_{z}=1, \widetilde{V}=10^{-2}$. In the case of HGO, the parameters values are the same as they are for single differentiation in Example 9.1. For a signal-to-noise ratio (SNR) of $40 \mathrm{~dB}\left(D_{2}=0.00699945\right)$, Figure 9.3 compares the signals estimated by SD/RCIE, SD/HGO, and SD/BDD with the true first derivative.


Figure 9.2: Example 9.1 Double Differentiation. (a) The signal estimated by DD/HGO follows the true second derivative $y^{(2)}$ after about 20 steps, the signal estimated by DD/RCIE follows $y^{(2)}$ after about 50 steps, and the signal estimated by DD/BDD follows $y^{(2)}$ without a transient period. The signal estimated by DD/HGO has large oscillations in the transient period. (b) A zoomed view of plot (a). At steady state, DD/HGO is more accurate than DD/RCIE and DD/BDD.

## Double Differentiation

In the case of RCIE, let $n_{\mathrm{c}}=18, n_{\mathrm{f}}=4, R_{\theta}=10^{-1} I_{37}, R_{d}=10^{-6}, R_{z}=1, \widetilde{V}=10^{-5}$. In the case of HGO, the parameters values are the same as they are for double differentiation in Example 9.1. For an SNR of 40 dB , Figure 9.4 compares the signals estimated by DD/RCIE, DD/HGO, and $\mathrm{DD} / \mathrm{BDD}$ with the true second derivative.

In order to do quantitative comparison among the different methods, the normalized RMSE in the estimation of the single derivative and the double derivative is plotted in Figures 9.5 and 9.6, respectively, for SNRs in the range of 40 dB to 60 dB .

## Inference

Both HGO and RCIE give better estimates of the derivative than BDD. Though the performance of HGO is better than that of RCIE in the case of double differentiation, it is difficult to tune


Figure 9.3: Example 9.2 Single Differentiation. (a) The signals estimated by SD/RCIE, SD/HGO, and SD/BDD follow the true first derivative $y^{(1)}$ after an initial transient period. SD/HGO exhibits a longer transient period as compared to SD/RCIE. (b) A zoomed view of plot (a). At steady state, $\mathrm{SD} / \mathrm{HGO}$ is more accurate than SD/RCIE and SD/BDD.
the parameters of HGO and hence it is more practical to use RCIE for both single and double differentiation.

### 9.5 Differentiation of Experimental Data

RCIE, HGO, and BDD are applied to experimental position data of a small rover for estimating its velocity and acceleration. An OptiTrack camera sensor is used to collect the position data of the rover at a sample rate of 50 Hz . Figure 9.7 depicts the trajectory of the rover on the $x-y$ plane and the position data along the $x$-axis. Differentiation of the position data along the $x$-axis is done to obtain the velocity and the acceleration along the $x$-axis. Since the true velocity and the true acceleration of the rover are not known, it is not possible to evaluate the accuracy of the estimated signals.


Figure 9.4: Example 9.2 Double Differentiation. (a) The signal estimated by DD/RCIE follows the true second derivative $y^{(2)}$ after an initial transient period. Though the signals estimated by $\mathrm{DD} / \mathrm{HGO}$ and $\mathrm{DD} / \mathrm{BDD}$ follow the general trend of $y^{(2)}$, they are noisy. (b) A zoomed view of plot (a). At steady state, $\mathrm{DD} / \mathrm{RCIE}$ is more accurate than $\mathrm{DD} / \mathrm{HGO}$ and $\mathrm{DD} / \mathrm{BDD}$.


Figure 9.5: Example 9.2. Normalized RMSE in the estimation of the first derivative. SD/HGO performs better than SD/RCIE and SD/BDD.


Figure 9.6: Example 9.2. Normalized RMSE in the estimation of the second derivative. DD/RCIE performs better than DD/HGO and DD/BDD.


Figure 9.7: Experimental Data. (a) The trajectory of the rover on the $x-y$ plane. (b) Position of the rover along $x$-axis versus time.

## Single Differentiation

In the case of RCIE, let $n_{\mathrm{c}}=1, n_{\mathrm{f}}=6, R_{\theta}=10^{-3} I_{3}, R_{d}=10^{-5}, R_{z}=1, \widetilde{V}=10^{-4}$. In the case of HGO, let $n=3$ in (9.1), (9.2), and (9.3), let $\alpha_{1}=3, \alpha_{2}=3, \alpha_{3}=1$. The parameter $\varepsilon$ is given an optimum value that renders the estimated signal smooth and follow the general trend of the signals estimated by RCIE and BDD. Figure 9.8 compares the signals estimated by SD/RCIE, SD/HGO, and SD/BDD.


Figure 9.8: Single Differentiation of Experimental Data. (a) shows the signals estimated by SD/RCIE, SD/HGO, and SD/BDD. (b) A zoomed view of plot (a). The signal estimated by SD/BDD is noisy, whereas the signals estimated by SD/RCIE and SD/HGO are reasonably smooth.

## Double Differentiation

In the case of RCIE, let $n_{\mathrm{c}}=18, n_{\mathrm{f}}=4, R_{\theta}=10^{-1} I_{37}, R_{d}=10^{-6}, R_{z}=1, \widetilde{V}=10^{-5}$. In the case of HGO, let $n=4$ in (9.1), (9.2), and (9.3), let $\alpha_{1}=8, \alpha_{2}=24, \alpha_{3}=32, \alpha_{4}=16$. The parameter $\varepsilon$ is chosen in the same way as chosen for single differentiation. Figure 9.9 compares the signals estimated by DD/RCIE, DD/HGO, and DD/BDD.


Figure 9.9: Double Differentiation of Experimental Data. (a) shows the signals estimated by DD/RCIE, DD/HGO, and DD/BDD. (b) A zoomed view of plot (a). The signal estimated by DD/BDD is noisy, whereas the signals estimated by DD/RCIE and DD/HGO are reasonably smooth.

## CHAPTER 10

## Decomposition of Retrospective Performance Variable in RCAC

This chapter presents the decomposition of retrospective performance variable within the context of RCAC. The same approach that was used for the decomposition of retrospective performance variable in RCIE in chapter 8 is used here.

### 10.1 Retrospective Cost Adaptive Control

Retrospective Cost Adaptive Control (RCAC) [76] is a direct, discrete-time adaptive control technique for stabilization, command following, and disturbance rejection. As a discrete-time approach, RCAC is motivated by the desire to implement control algorithms that operate at a fixed measurement sampling rate without the need for controller discretization. This discretization also means that the required modeling information can be estimated based on data sampled at the same rate as the control update. RCAC was motivated by the concept of retrospectively optimized control, where past controller coefficients used to generate past control inputs are reoptimized in the sense that, if the reoptimized coefficients had been used over a previous window of operation, then the performance would have been better. However, unlike signal processing applications such as estimation and identification, it is impossible to change past control inputs, and thus the reoptimized controller coefficients are used only to generate the next control input.

Consider the LTV discrete-time system

$$
\begin{align*}
x_{k+1} & =A_{k} x_{k}+B_{k} u_{k}+B_{w, k} w_{k},  \tag{10.1}\\
y_{k} & =C_{k} x_{k}+v_{k}, \tag{10.2}
\end{align*}
$$

where $x_{k} \in \mathbb{R}^{n}$ is the state, $u_{k} \in \mathbb{R}^{m}$ is the control, $w_{k} \in \mathbb{R}^{l}$ is the disturbance, $y_{k} \in \mathbb{R}^{p}$ is the measured output, and $v_{k} \in \mathbb{R}^{p}$ is the sensor noise. Define the command-following error

$$
\begin{equation*}
z_{k} \triangleq r_{k}-y_{k} \tag{10.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $r_{k} \in \mathbb{R}^{p}$ is the command signal. Consider the strictly proper, discrete-time dynamic compensator

$$
\begin{equation*}
u_{k}=\sum_{i=1}^{n_{\mathrm{c}}} P_{i, k} u_{k-i}+\sum_{i=1}^{n_{\mathrm{c}}} Q_{i, k} z_{k-i}, \tag{10.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $k \geq 0, u_{k} \in \mathbb{R}^{m}$ is the requested control, $n_{\mathrm{c}}$ is the controller window length, and $Q_{1, k}, \ldots, Q_{n_{\mathrm{c}}, k} \in \mathbb{R}^{m \times p}$ and $P_{1, k}, \ldots, P_{n_{\mathrm{c}}, k} \in \mathbb{R}^{m \times m}$ are the numerator and denominator controller coefficient matrices, respectively. For convenience, a "cold" startup is assumed, where $Q_{1,0}, \ldots, Q_{n_{\mathrm{c}}, 0}, P_{1,0}, \ldots, P_{n_{\mathrm{c}}, 0}, u_{-n_{\mathrm{c}}}, \ldots, u_{-1}$, and $z_{-n_{\mathrm{c}}}, \ldots, z_{-1}$ are defined to be zero, and thus $u_{0}=0$. The controller (10.4) can be written as

$$
\begin{equation*}
u_{k}=\phi_{\mathrm{c}, k} \theta_{\mathrm{c}, k}, \tag{10.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

where

$$
\phi_{\mathrm{c}, k} \triangleq\left[\begin{array}{c}
u_{k-1}  \tag{10.6}\\
\vdots \\
u_{k-n_{\mathrm{c}}} \\
z_{k-1} \\
\vdots \\
z_{k-n_{\mathrm{c}}}
\end{array}\right]^{\mathrm{T}} \otimes I_{m} \in \mathbb{R}^{m \times l_{\theta_{\mathrm{c}}}}
$$

is the controller regressor, $l_{\theta_{\mathrm{c}}} \triangleq n_{\mathrm{c}} m(m+p)$, and the controller coefficient vector is defined by

$$
\theta_{\mathrm{c}, k} \triangleq \operatorname{vec}\left[\begin{array}{llllll}
P_{1, k} & \cdots & P_{n_{\mathrm{c}}, k} & Q_{1, k} & \cdots & Q_{n_{\mathrm{c}}, k} \tag{10.7}
\end{array}\right] \in \mathbb{R}^{l_{\theta_{c}}} .
$$

In terms of $\mathbf{q}^{-1}$, the controller (10.4) can be expressed as

$$
\begin{equation*}
u_{k}=G_{\mathrm{c}, k}\left(\mathbf{q}^{-1}\right) z_{k}, \tag{10.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

where

$$
\begin{align*}
G_{\mathrm{c}, k} & \triangleq D_{\mathrm{c}, k}^{-1} N_{\mathrm{c}, k}  \tag{10.9}\\
N_{\mathrm{c}, k}\left(\mathbf{q}^{-1}\right) & \triangleq Q_{1, k} \mathbf{q}^{-1}+\cdots+Q_{n_{\mathrm{c}}, k} \mathbf{q}^{-n_{\mathrm{c}}},  \tag{10.10}\\
D_{\mathrm{c}, k}\left(\mathbf{q}^{-1}\right) & \triangleq I_{m}-P_{1, k} \mathbf{q}^{-1}-\cdots-P_{n_{\mathrm{c}}, k} \mathbf{q}^{-n_{\mathrm{c}}} \tag{10.11}
\end{align*}
$$

Next, define the filtered signals

$$
\begin{gather*}
u_{\mathrm{f}, k} \triangleq G_{\mathrm{f}, k}\left(\mathbf{q}^{-1}\right) u_{k}  \tag{10.12}\\
\phi_{\mathrm{f}, k} \triangleq G_{\mathrm{f}, k}\left(\mathbf{q}^{-1}\right) \phi_{\mathrm{c}, k} \tag{10.13}
\end{gather*}
$$

where, for startup, $u_{\mathrm{f}, k}$ and $\phi_{\mathrm{f}, k}$ are initialized at zero. The $p \times m$ filter $G_{\mathrm{f}, k}$ has the form

$$
\begin{equation*}
G_{\mathrm{f}, k} \triangleq D_{\mathrm{f}, k}^{-1} N_{\mathrm{f}, k}, \tag{10.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

where

$$
\begin{align*}
& N_{\mathrm{f}, k}\left(\mathbf{q}^{-1}\right) \triangleq N_{0, k}+N_{1, k} \mathbf{q}^{-1}+\cdots+N_{n_{f}, k} \mathbf{q}^{-n_{\mathrm{f}}},  \tag{10.15}\\
& D_{\mathrm{f}, k}\left(\mathbf{q}^{-1}\right) \triangleq I_{q}+D_{1, k} \mathbf{q}^{-1}+\cdots+D_{n_{f}, k} \mathbf{q}^{-n_{\mathrm{f}}}, \tag{10.16}
\end{align*}
$$

$n_{\mathrm{f}}$ is the filter window length, and $N_{0, k}, \ldots, N_{n_{\mathrm{f}}, k} \in \mathbb{R}^{p \times m}$ and $D_{1, k}, \ldots, D_{n_{\mathrm{f}}, k} \in \mathbb{R}^{p \times p}$ are the numerator and denominator coefficients of $G_{\mathrm{f}, k}$, respectively.

Next, in order to update the controller coefficient vector (10.7), define the retrospective performance variable

$$
\begin{equation*}
z_{\mathrm{rp}, k}\left(\theta_{\mathrm{c}}\right) \triangleq z_{k}-\left(u_{\mathrm{f}, k}-\phi_{\mathrm{f}, k} \theta_{\mathrm{c}}\right) \tag{10.17}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\theta_{\mathrm{c}}$ is a generic variable for optimization. Note that $u_{\mathrm{f}, k}$ depends on $u_{k}$ and thus on the current controller coefficient vector $\theta_{\mathrm{c}, k}$. The retrospective performance variable $z_{\mathrm{rp}, k}\left(\theta_{\mathrm{c}}\right)$ is used to determine the updated controller coefficient vector $\theta_{\mathrm{c}, k+1}$ by minimizing a function of $z_{\mathrm{rp}, k}$. The optimized value of $z_{\mathrm{rp}, k}$ is thus given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
z_{\mathrm{rp}, k}\left(\theta_{\mathrm{c}, k+1}\right)=z_{k}-\left(u_{\mathrm{f}, k}-\phi_{\mathrm{f}, k} \theta_{\mathrm{c}, k+1}\right), \tag{10.18}
\end{equation*}
$$

which shows that the updated controller coefficient vector $\theta_{c, k+1}$ is "applied" retrospectively with the filtered controller regressor $\phi_{\mathrm{f}, k}$. Furthermore, note that the filter $G_{\mathrm{f}, k}$ is used to obtain $\phi_{\mathrm{f}, k}$ from $\phi_{k}$ by means of (10.13) but ignores past changes in the controller coefficient vector, as can be seen by the product $\phi_{\mathrm{f}, k} \theta_{\mathrm{c}, k+1}$ in (10.18). Consequently, the filtering used to construct (10.18) ignores changes in the controller coefficient vector over the window $\left[k-n_{\mathrm{f}}, k\right]$.

Define the retrospective cost function

$$
\begin{equation*}
J_{k}\left(\theta_{\mathrm{c}}\right) \triangleq \sum_{i=0}^{k} z_{\mathrm{rp}, i}\left(\theta_{\mathrm{c}}\right)^{\mathrm{T}} z_{\mathrm{rp}, i}\left(\theta_{\mathrm{c}}\right)+\left(\theta_{\mathrm{c}}-\theta_{\mathrm{c}, 0}\right)^{\mathrm{T}} P_{\mathrm{c}, 0}^{-1}\left(\theta_{\mathrm{c}}-\theta_{\mathrm{c}, 0}\right) \tag{10.19}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $P_{\mathrm{c}, 0} \in \mathbb{R}^{l_{\theta_{\mathrm{c}}} \times l_{\theta_{c}}}$ is positive definite. For all $k \geq 0$, the minimizer $\theta_{\mathrm{c}, k+1}$ of (10.19) is given by the recursive least squares (RLS) solution [126]

$$
\begin{align*}
P_{\mathrm{c}, k+1} & =P_{\mathrm{c}, k}-P_{\mathrm{c}, k} \phi_{\mathrm{f}, k}^{\mathrm{T}}\left(I_{p}+\phi_{\mathrm{f}, k} P_{\mathrm{c}, k} \phi_{\mathrm{f}, k}^{\mathrm{T}}\right)^{-1} \phi_{\mathrm{f}, k} P_{\mathrm{c}, k},  \tag{10.20}\\
\theta_{\mathrm{c}, k+1} & =\theta_{\mathrm{c}, k}+P_{\mathrm{c}, k+1} \phi_{\mathrm{f}, k}^{\mathrm{T}}\left(z_{k}-u_{\mathrm{f}, k}-\phi_{\mathrm{f}, k} \theta_{\mathrm{c}, k}\right) . \tag{10.21}
\end{align*}
$$

Using the updated controller coefficient vector given by (10.21), the requested control at step $k+1$ is given by replacing $k$ by $k+1$ in (10.5). Although $\theta_{\mathrm{c}, 0}$ can be chosen arbitrarily, we chose $\theta_{\mathrm{c}, 0}=0$ in order to reflect the absence of additional modeling information. Note that $P_{\mathrm{c}, 0}$ is a tuning parameter.

### 10.2 Decomposition of the Retrospective Performance Variable

Define the virtual external input perturbation for RCAC as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\widetilde{u}_{k}\left(\theta_{\mathrm{c}}\right) \triangleq u_{k}-\phi_{\mathrm{c}, k} \theta_{\mathrm{c}} \tag{10.22}
\end{equation*}
$$

Let $\widetilde{u}_{f, k}\left(\theta_{c, k+1}\right)$ be given by the FIA filter

$$
\begin{equation*}
\widetilde{u}_{\mathrm{f}, k}\left(\theta_{\mathrm{c}, k+1}\right) \triangleq G_{\mathrm{f}, k}\left(\mathbf{q}^{-1}\right) \widetilde{u}_{k}\left(\theta_{\mathrm{c}, \overline{k+1}}\right) \tag{10.23}
\end{equation*}
$$

Note that $\widetilde{u}_{\mathrm{f}, k}\left(\theta_{\mathrm{c}, k+1}\right)$ ignores the change in the argument $\theta_{\mathrm{c}, k+1}$ of $\widetilde{u}_{k}$ over the interval $\left[k-n_{\mathrm{f}}, k\right]$ in accordance with retrospective optimization. Using (10.23), (10.18) can be written as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\hat{z}_{\mathrm{rp}, k}\left(\theta_{\mathrm{c}, k+1}\right) \triangleq z_{k}-\widetilde{u}_{\mathrm{f}, k}\left(\theta_{\mathrm{c}, k+1}\right) \tag{10.24}
\end{equation*}
$$

The following matrices are used in Theorem 10.1.

$$
\begin{align*}
& \widetilde{A}_{k} \triangleq\left[\begin{array}{cccc}
0 & \cdots & 0 & P_{n_{\mathrm{c}}, k+n_{\mathrm{c}}+1} \\
I & \cdots & 0 & P_{n_{\mathrm{c}}-1, k+n_{\mathrm{c}}} \\
\vdots & \cdots & \vdots & \vdots \\
0 & \cdots & I & P_{1, k+2}
\end{array}\right], \quad B_{\widetilde{u}} \triangleq\left[\begin{array}{c}
I_{m} \\
0 \\
\vdots \\
0
\end{array}\right] \in \mathbb{R}^{m n_{\mathrm{c}} \times m},  \tag{10.25}\\
& \widetilde{B}_{k} \triangleq\left[\begin{array}{c}
Q_{n_{\mathrm{c}}, k+n_{\mathrm{c}}+1} \\
Q_{n_{\mathrm{c}}-1, k+n_{\mathrm{c}}} \\
\vdots \\
Q_{1, k+2}
\end{array}\right], \quad \widetilde{C} \triangleq\left[\begin{array}{llll}
0 & \cdots & 0 & I_{n_{\mathrm{c}}}
\end{array}\right] \in \mathbb{R}^{m \times m n_{\mathrm{c}}},  \tag{10.26}\\
& \hat{A}_{k} \triangleq\left[\begin{array}{cc}
A_{k} & B_{k} \widetilde{C} \\
-\widetilde{B}_{k} C_{k} & \widetilde{A_{k}}
\end{array}\right], \quad \hat{B}_{k} \triangleq\left[\begin{array}{ccc}
0 & B_{w, k} & 0 \\
B_{\widetilde{u}} & 0 & \widetilde{B}_{k}
\end{array}\right]  \tag{10.27}\\
& \hat{C}_{k} \triangleq\left[\begin{array}{lll}
-C_{k} & 0_{p \times m n_{\mathrm{c}}}
\end{array}\right], \quad \hat{D} \triangleq\left[\begin{array}{lll}
0 & I_{l_{y}}
\end{array}\right] . \tag{10.28}
\end{align*}
$$

The following result presents the retrospective performance variable decomposition, which shows that the retrospective performance variable is a combination of the closed-loop performance and the extent to which the updated closed-loop transfer function from $\widetilde{u}_{k}\left(\theta_{k+1}\right)$ to $z_{k}$ matches the filter $G_{\mathrm{f}, k}$. Henceforth, $G_{\mathrm{f}, k}$ is called the target model since it serves as the target for the closedloop transfer function from $\widetilde{u}_{k}\left(\theta_{k+1}\right)$ to $z_{k}$.

Theorem 10.1. For all $k \geq 0$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
z_{\mathrm{rp}, k}\left(\theta_{\mathrm{c}, k+1}\right)=z_{\mathrm{pp}, k}\left(\theta_{\mathrm{c}, k+1}\right)+z_{\mathrm{mm}, k}\left(\theta_{\mathrm{c}, k+1}\right), \tag{10.29}
\end{equation*}
$$

where the performance term $z_{\mathrm{pp}, k}\left(\theta_{\mathrm{c}, k+1}\right)$ and the model-matching term $z_{\mathrm{mm}, k}\left(\theta_{\mathrm{c}, k+1}\right)$ are defined as

$$
\begin{align*}
z_{\mathrm{pp}, k}\left(\theta_{\mathrm{c}, k+1}\right) & \triangleq G_{z \bar{u}, k}\left(\mathbf{q}^{-1}\right) \bar{u}_{k}  \tag{10.30}\\
z_{\mathrm{mm}, k}\left(\theta_{\mathrm{c}, k+1}\right) & \triangleq G_{z \widetilde{u}, k}\left(\mathbf{q}^{-1}\right) \widetilde{u}_{k}\left(\theta_{\mathrm{c}, k+1}\right)-G_{\mathrm{f}, k}\left(\mathbf{q}^{-1}\right) \widetilde{u}_{k}\left(\theta_{\mathrm{c}, \overline{k+1}}\right) \tag{10.31}
\end{align*}
$$

and $\bar{u}_{k} \triangleq\left[\begin{array}{ll}w_{k}^{\mathrm{T}} & \left(r_{k}-v_{k}\right)^{\mathrm{T}}\end{array}\right]^{\mathrm{T}}$. The time-domain transfer functions $G_{z \bar{u}, k} \in \mathbb{R}^{p \times(l+p)}$ and $G_{z \tilde{u}, k} \in$ $\mathbb{R}^{p \times m}$ are given by

$$
\left[\begin{array}{ll}
G_{z \widetilde{u}, k} & G_{z \bar{u}, k} \tag{10.32}
\end{array}\right] \triangleq G_{z \hat{u}, k},
$$

where $G_{z \hat{u}, k}$ is the time-domain transfer function of the system represented by the state space model

$$
\begin{align*}
\hat{x}_{k+1} & =\hat{A}_{k} \hat{x}_{k}+\hat{B}_{k} \hat{u}_{k}  \tag{10.33}\\
z_{k} & =\hat{C}_{k} \hat{x}_{k}+\hat{D} \hat{u}_{k} \tag{10.34}
\end{align*}
$$

$\hat{u}_{k} \triangleq\left[\begin{array}{ll}\widetilde{u}_{k}^{\mathrm{T}}\left(\theta_{\mathrm{c}, k+1}\right) & \bar{u}_{k}^{\mathrm{T}}\end{array}\right]^{\mathrm{T}}, \hat{x}_{0} \triangleq\left[\begin{array}{cc}x_{0}^{\mathrm{T}} & 0_{1 \times n_{\mathrm{c}} m}\end{array}\right]^{\mathrm{T}}$, and $\hat{A}_{k}, \hat{B}_{k}, \hat{C}_{k}$, and $\hat{D}$ are defined in (10.27) and (10.28).

Proof. Note that (10.4) implies that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\phi_{k} \theta_{\mathrm{c}, k+1}=\sum_{i=1}^{n_{\mathrm{c}}} P_{i, k+1} u_{k-i}+\sum_{i=1}^{n_{\mathrm{c}}} Q_{i, k+1} z_{k-i} . \tag{10.35}
\end{equation*}
$$

Substituting $\theta_{c}=\theta_{c, k+1}$ and (10.35) in (10.22) yields

$$
\begin{equation*}
u_{k}=\widetilde{u}_{k}\left(\theta_{\mathrm{c}, k+1}\right)+\sum_{i=1}^{n_{\mathrm{c}}} P_{i, k+1} u_{k-i}+\sum_{i=1}^{n_{\mathrm{c}}} Q_{i, k+1} z_{k-i} . \tag{10.36}
\end{equation*}
$$

Using (10.10) and (10.11), it follows from (10.36) that

$$
u_{k}=\widetilde{u}_{k}\left(\theta_{\mathrm{c}, k+1}\right)+u_{k}-D_{c, k+1}\left(\mathbf{q}^{-1}\right) u_{k}+N_{c, k+1}\left(\mathbf{q}^{-1}\right) z_{k}
$$

which, using (10.9), can be rewritten as

$$
\begin{equation*}
u_{k}=D_{c, k+1}^{-1}\left(\mathbf{q}^{-1}\right) \widetilde{u}_{k}\left(\theta_{\mathrm{c}, k+1}\right)+G_{c, k+1}\left(\mathbf{q}^{-1}\right) z_{k} . \tag{10.37}
\end{equation*}
$$

Note that (10.10), (10.11), and Proposition 7.2 imply that a state space model corresponding to (10.37) is given by

$$
\begin{align*}
\widetilde{x}_{k+1} & =\widetilde{A}_{k} \widetilde{x}_{k}+B_{\widetilde{u}} \widetilde{u}_{k}\left(\theta_{\mathrm{c}, k+1}\right)+\widetilde{B}_{k} z_{k},  \tag{10.38}\\
u_{k} & =\widetilde{C} \widetilde{x}_{k} \tag{10.39}
\end{align*}
$$

where $\widetilde{A}_{k}, B_{\widetilde{u}}, \widetilde{B}_{k}$, and $\widetilde{C}$ are defined in (10.25) and (10.26), and $\widetilde{x}_{0} \triangleq 0_{n_{\mathrm{c}} m \times 1}$. Next, substituting (10.2) in (10.3) yields

$$
z_{k}=-C_{k} x_{k}-v_{k}+r_{k}=-C_{k} x_{k}+\left[\begin{array}{cc}
0 & I_{l_{y}} \tag{10.40}
\end{array}\right] \bar{u}_{k} .
$$

Furthermore, substituting (10.39) in (10.1) yields

$$
x_{k+1}=A_{k} x_{k}+B_{k} \widetilde{C} \widetilde{x}_{k}+B_{w, k} w_{k}=A_{k} x_{k}+B_{k} \widetilde{C} \widetilde{x}_{k}+\left[\begin{array}{ll}
B_{w, k} & 0 \tag{10.41}
\end{array}\right] \bar{u}_{k} .
$$

and substituting (10.40) in (10.38) yields

$$
\begin{align*}
\widetilde{x}_{k+1} & =-\widetilde{B}_{k} C_{k} x_{k}+\widetilde{A}_{k} \widetilde{x}_{k}+B_{\widetilde{u}} \widetilde{u}_{k}\left(\theta_{\mathrm{c}, k+1}\right)-\widetilde{B}_{k} v_{k}+\widetilde{B}_{k} r_{k} \\
& =-\widetilde{B}_{k} C_{k} x_{k}+\widetilde{A}_{k} \widetilde{x}_{k}+B_{\widetilde{u}} \widetilde{u}_{k}\left(\theta_{\mathrm{c}, k+1}\right)+\left[\begin{array}{cc}
0 & \widetilde{B}_{k}
\end{array}\right] \bar{u}_{k} . \tag{10.42}
\end{align*}
$$

Define $\hat{x}_{k} \triangleq\left[\begin{array}{ll}x_{k}^{T} & \widetilde{x}_{k}^{T}\end{array}\right]^{\mathrm{T}}$. Then, (10.33) and (10.34) follow from (10.40), (10.41), and (10.42). Since $G_{z \widetilde{u}, k}$ is the time-domain transfer function of the system represented by (10.33) and (10.34), it follows from (10.32) that

$$
\begin{equation*}
z_{k}=G_{z \bar{u}, k}\left(\mathbf{q}^{-1}\right) \bar{u}_{k}+G_{z \widetilde{u}, k}\left(\mathbf{q}^{-1}\right) \widetilde{u}_{k}\left(\theta_{\mathbf{c}, k+1}\right) . \tag{10.43}
\end{equation*}
$$

Finally, substituting (10.43) in (10.24) yields (10.29).

Note that the expression for $G_{z \hat{u}, k}$ is obtained using (10.27) and (10.28) in accordance with Definition 2.20 and Proposition 7.1. In order to apply Proposition 7.1, (10.33) and (10.34) must be converted to a completely observable state space model. The time-varying Eigensystem Realization Algorithm explained in Section IV of [127] provides a method to reduce any given LTV state space model to a minimal state space model.

Proposition 10.2. Assume that $\lim _{k \rightarrow \infty} \theta_{\mathrm{c}, k}$ exists and $\phi_{\mathrm{c}, k}$ is bounded. Then $\lim _{k \rightarrow \infty} \widetilde{u}_{k}\left(\theta_{\mathrm{c}, k+1}\right)=0$.
Proof. Equations (6.6) and (10.22) imply that

$$
\widetilde{u}_{k}\left(\theta_{\mathrm{c}, k+1}\right)=u_{k}-\phi_{\mathrm{c}, k} \theta_{\mathrm{c}, k+1}=\phi_{\mathrm{c}, k}\left(\theta_{\mathrm{c}, k}-\theta_{\mathrm{c}, k+1}\right) .
$$

Defining $\alpha \triangleq \sup _{k \geq 0} \sigma_{\max }\left(\phi_{\mathrm{c}, k}\right)$, where $\sigma_{\text {max }}$ denotes the maximum singular value, it follows that

$$
\left\|\widetilde{u}_{k}\left(\theta_{k+1}\right)\right\| \leq \sigma_{\max }\left(\phi_{\mathrm{c}, k}\right)\left\|\theta_{\mathrm{c}, k}-\theta_{\mathrm{c}, k+1}\right\|=\alpha\left\|\theta_{\mathrm{c}, k}-\theta_{\mathrm{c}, k+1}\right\| .
$$

Hence,

$$
\lim _{k \rightarrow \infty}\left\|\widetilde{u}_{k}\left(\theta_{c, k+1}\right)\right\| \leq \alpha \lim _{k \rightarrow \infty}\left\|\theta_{c, k}-\theta_{c, k+1}\right\|=0
$$

and thus $\lim _{k \rightarrow \infty} \widetilde{u}_{k}\left(\theta_{c, k+1}\right)=0$.

## CHAPTER 11

## Conclusions and Future Work

### 11.1 Conclusions

Finite-time input estimation for discrete-time linear time-invariant (LTI) systems with zero nonzero zeros and unknown initial conditions was considered. Necessary and sufficient conditions for finite-time input estimation were derived. For systems with zero nonzero zeros, a specific construction of a finite-impulse-response (FIR) delayed left inverse with minimal delay using the Smith-McMillan form at infinity was given. Expressions for the number of transmission zeros and the number of infinite zeros in terms of the defect of a block-Toeplitz matrix of Markov parameters and the observability matrix were obtained. Furthermore, several results on the zero dynamics of input-output models were derived. Output zeroing in input-output models was considered, and its equivalence to output zeroing in state space models was established.

The decomposition of the retrospective performance variable in RCIE into the sum of a performance term and a model-matching term was presented. Construction of LTV state space realizations for LTV input-output models as well as the construction of LTV input-output models for LTV state space models were given and used to derive a decomposition of the retrospective performance variable. Similarly, the decomposition of the retrospective performance variable in RCAC was also presented.

Finally RCIE was applied to causal numerical differentiation. The performance of RCIE and HGO as causal differentiators was analyzed through numerical simulations. Both methods were
then applied to the position data of a small rover to estimate its velocity and acceleration.

### 11.2 Future Work

## Finite-time input estimation

Future work includes analysis of the robustness of the finite-time input estimation results to parameter uncertainties and noise. Furthermore, the work on zero dynamics of input-output models might help extend FIR delayed left inverses to nonlinear systems.

## System Zeros

Future research will focus on numerically estimating the numbers of infinite zeros and transmission zeros in the presence of noisy data. In particular, by applying the singular value decomposition and nuclear norm minimization $[128,129]$ to the matrices $\Psi$ and $\mathcal{T}$ obtained from subspace identification [130], it may be possible to estimate the number of zeros. The application of these results to improving the accuracy of the computation of zeros using standard methods [131] is another promising topic for future work.

## Decomposition of the Retrospective Performance Variable

Observations from the analysis of the decomposition of the retrospective performance variable suggest that the closed-loop performance and model-matching terms might be helpful in determining the convergence of RCIE. A complete convergence analysis of RCIE, both deterministic and stochastic, is an interesting future research work.

## Causal Numerical Differentiation

Future research will focus on the development of metrics that can be used to determine the relative accuracy of the RCIE estimates. Extension to include adaptation of bias and variance
of sensor noise to address the situation where the sensor noise is unknown and possibly timedependent is another research direction to be considered.

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

[1] H. Weinert, "On the Inversion of Linear Systems," IEEE Trans. Autom. Contr., vol. 29, no. 10, pp. 956-958, 1984.
[2] P. Moylan, "Stable Inversion of Linear Systems," IEEE Trans. Autom. Contr., vol. 22, no. 1, pp. 74-78, 1977.
[3] V. Lovass-Nagy, R. J. Miller, and D. L. Powers, "On the Application of Matrix Generalized Inverses to the Construction of Inverse Systems," International Journal of Control, vol. 24, no. 5, pp. 733-739, 1976.
[4] P. Dorato, "On the Inverse of Linear Dynamical Systems," IEEE Transactions on systems science and cybernetics, vol. 5, no. 1, pp. 43-48, 1969.
[5] P. Antsaklis, "Stable Proper nth-Order Inverses," IEEE Transactions on automatic Control, vol. 23, no. 6, pp. 1104-1106, 1978.
[6] A. M. Perdon, G. Conte, and S. Longhi, "Invertibility and Inversion of Linear Periodic Systems," Automatica, vol. 28, no. 3, pp. 645-648, 1992.
[7] C. M. Brislawn, "Rational Transfer Matrices with FIR Inverses," in Proceedings of Third International Symposium on Time-Frequency and Time-Scale Analysis (TFTS-96), pp. 5356, IEEE, 1996.
[8] W. Hunek and K. Latawiec, "A Study on New Right/Left Inverses of Nonsquare Polynomial Matrices," International Journal of Applied Mathematics and Computer Science, vol. 21, no. 2, pp. 331-348, 2011.
[9] Q. Zou and S. Devasia, "Preview-Based Stable-Inversion for Output Tracking of Linear Systems," Journal of Dynamic Systems, Measurement, and Control, vol. 121, no. 4, pp. 625630, 1999.
[10] K. George, M. Verhaegen, and J. M. A. Scherpen, "Stable Inversion of MIMO Linear Discrete Time Nonminimum Phase Systems," in Proc. Mediterranean conference on control and automation, pp. 267-281, 1999.
[11] E. Naderi and K. Khorasani, "Inversion-Based Output Tracking and Unknown Input Reconstruction of Square Discrete-Time Linear Systems," arXiv preprint arXiv:1606.06215, 2016.
[12] S. Devasia, "Should Model-Based Inverse Inputs be Used as Feedforward Under Plant Uncertainty?," IEEE Trans. Autom. Contr., vol. 47, no. 11, pp. 1865-1871, 2002.
[13] P. Martin, S. Devasia, and B. Paden, "A Different Look at Output Tracking: Control of a VTOL Aircraft," Automatica, vol. 32, no. 1, pp. 101-107, 1996.
[14] M. Tomizuka, "Zero Phase Error Tracking Algorithm for Digital Control," ASME J. Dyn. Sys. Meas. Contr., vol. 109, no. 1, pp. 65-68, 1987.
[15] K.-S. Kim and Q. Zou, "A Modeling-Free Inversion-Based Iterative Feedforward Control for Precision Output Tracking of Linear Time-Invariant Systems," IEEE/ASME Trans. Mechatronics, vol. 18, no. 6, pp. 1767-1777, 2013.
[16] Y. Wu and Q. Zou, "Robust Inversion-Based 2-DOF Control Design for Output Tracking: Piezoelectric-Actuator Example," IEEE Trans. Contr. Sys. Tech., vol. 17, no. 5, pp. 10691082, 2009.
[17] A. Piazzi and A. Visioli, "Optimal Inversion-Based Control for the Set-Point Regulation of Nonminimum-Phase Uncertain Scalar Systems," IEEE Trans. Autom. Contr., vol. 46, no. 10, pp. 1654-1659, 2001.
[18] B. Widrow, Adaptive Inverse Control. Elsevier, 1987.
[19] G. L. Plett, "Adaptive Inverse Control of Unmodeled Stable SISO and MIMO Linear Systems," International Journal of Adaptive Control and Signal Processing, vol. 16, no. 4, pp. 243-272, 2002.
[20] G. Marro, D. Prattichizzo, and E. Zattoni, "Convolution Profiles for Right Inversion of Multivariable Non-Minimum Phase Discrete-Time Systems," Automatica, vol. 38, no. 10, pp. 1695-1703, 2002.
[21] M. Cocetti, M. Ragni, S. Tarbouriech, and L. Zaccarian, "A Hybrid Adaptive Inverse for Uncertain SISO Linear Plants with Full Relative Degree," in Proc. Amer. Contr. Conf., pp. 2315-2320, 2019.
[22] R. Romagnoli and E. Garone, "A General Framework for Approximated Model Stable Inversion," Automatica, vol. 101, pp. 182-189, 2019.
[23] M. Tomizuka, "Zero Phase Error Tracking Algorithm for Digital Control," ASME journal of Dynamic Systems, Measurement, and Control, vol. 65, no. 9, pp. 65-68, 1987.
[24] A. Costalunga and A. Piazzi, "A Behavioral Approach to Inversion-Based Control," Automatica, vol. 95, pp. 433-445, 2018.
[25] J. L. Massey and M. Sain, "Inverses of Linear Sequential Circuits," IEEE Trans. Computers, vol. 17, pp. 330-337, 1968.
[26] M. Sain and J. L. Massey, "Invertibility of Linear Time-Invariant Dynamical Systems," IEEE Trans. Autom. Contr., vol. 14, pp. 141-149, 1969.
[27] L. Silverman, "Inversion of Multivariable Linear Systems," IEEE Trans. Autom. Contr, vol. 14, pp. 270-276, 1969.
[28] A. Willsky, "On the Invertibility of Linear Systems," IEEE Trans. Autom. Contr., vol. 19, pp. 272-274, 1974.
[29] E.-W. Bai and Z. Ding, "Invertibility of Sampled Data Systems," IEEE Trans. Circuits and Systems I: Fundamental Theory and Applications, vol. 47, no. 3, pp. 279-289, 2000.
[30] P. Orner, "Construction of Inverse Systems," IEEE Transactions on automatic Control, vol. 17, no. 1, pp. 151-153, 1972.
[31] E. Emre and L. Silverman, "Minimal Dynamic Inverses for Linear Systems with Arbitrary Initial States," IEEE Transactions on Automatic Control, vol. 21, no. 5, pp. 766-769, 1976.
[32] M. Hou and R. J. Patton, "Input Observability and Input Reconstruction," Automatica, vol. 34, no. 6, pp. 789-794, 1998.
[33] S. Kirtikar, H. Palanthandalam-Madapusi, E. Zattoni, and D. S. Bernstein, "L-delay Input and Initial-State Reconstruction for Discrete-Time Linear Systems," Circuits, Systems, and Signal Processing, vol. 30, no. 1, pp. 233-262, 2011.
[34] A. Ansari and D. S. Bernstein, "Deadbeat Unknown-Input State Estimation and Input Reconstruction for Linear Discrete-Time Systems," Automatica, vol. 103, pp. 11-19, 2019.
[35] A. Ansari and D. S. Bernstein, "Deadbeat Input Reconstruction and State Estimation for Discrete-Time Linear Time-Varying Systems," in Proc. Amer. Contr. Conf., pp. 5123-5127, 2019.
[36] T. Floquet and J.-P. Barbot, "State and Unknown Input Estimation for Linear Discrete-Time Systems," Automatica, vol. 42, no. 11, pp. 1883-1889, 2006.
[37] H. J. Palanthandalam-Madapusi and D. S. Bernstein, "Unbiased Minimum-Variance Filtering for Input Reconstruction," in Proc. Amer. Contr. Conf., pp. 5712-5717, 2007.
[38] H. J. Palanthandalam-Madapusi and D. S. Bernstein, "A Subspace Algorithm for Simultaneous Identification and Input Reconstruction," International Journal of Adaptive Control and Signal Processing, vol. 23, no. 12, pp. 1053-1069, 2009.
[39] R. A. Chavan, K. Fitch, and H. J. Palanthandalam-Madapusi, "Recursive Input Reconstruction with a Delay," in Proc. Amer. Contr. Conf., pp. 628-633, 2014.
[40] Y. Xiong and M. Saif, "Unknown Disturbance Inputs Estimation Based on a State Functional Observer Design," Automatica, vol. 39, no. 8, pp. 1389-1398, 2003.
[41] S. Gillijns and B. De Moor, "Unbiased Minimum-Variance Input and State Estimation for Linear Discrete-Time Systems," Automatica, vol. 43, no. 1, pp. 111-116, 2007.
[42] G. Marro and E. Zattoni, "Unknown-State, Unknown-Input Reconstruction in DiscreteTime Nonminimum-Phase Systems: Geometric Methods," Automatica, vol. 46, no. 5, pp. 815-822, 2010.
[43] G. Marro, E. Zattoni, and D. S. Bernstein, "Geometric Insight and Structure Algorithms for Unknown-State, Unknown-Input Reconstruction in Linear Multivariable Systems," IFAC Proc. Volumes, vol. 44, no. 1, pp. 11320-11325, 2011.
[44] A. M. D'Amato and D. S. Bernstein, "Adaptive Forward-Propagating Input Reconstruction for Nonminimum-Phase Systems," in Proc. Amer. Contr. Conf., pp. 598-603, 2012.
[45] H. Fu, J. Yan, M. A. Santillo, H. J. Palanthandalam-Madapusi, and D. S. Bernstein, "Fault Detection for Aircraft Control Surfaces Using Approximate Input Reconstruction," in Proc. Amer. Contr. Conf., pp. 4962-4967, 2009.
[46] H. Fang, Y. Shi, and J. Yi, "On Stable Simultaneous Input and State Estimation for DiscreteTime Linear Systems," International Journal of Adaptive Control and Signal Processing, vol. 25, no. 8, pp. 671-686, 2011.
[47] S. M. Fosson, F. Garin, S. Gracy, A. Y. Kibangou, and D. Swart, "Input and State Estimation Exploiting Input Sparsity," in 2019 European Control Conference, pp. 2344-2349, 2019.
[48] J. Draper III, S. Lee, and E. Marineau, "Numerical Construction of Impulse Response Functions and Input Signal Reconstruction," Journal of Sound and Vibration, vol. 432, pp. 259271, 2018.
[49] J. Chen, R. J. Patton, and H.-Y. Zhang, "Design of Unknown Input Observers and Robust Fault Detection Filters," Int. J. Contr., vol. 63, no. 1, pp. 85-105, 1996.
[50] Y. Guan and M. Saif, "A Novel Approach to the Design of Unknown Input Observers," IEEE Trans. Autom. Contr., vol. 36, no. 5, pp. 632-635, 1991.
[51] J. Chen and H. Zhang, "Robust Detection of Faulty Actuators Via Unknown Input Observers," International Journal of Systems Science, vol. 22, no. 10, pp. 1829-1839, 1991.
[52] G.-R. Duan and R. J. Patton, "Robust Fault Detection Using Luenberger-Type Unknown Input Observers-A Parametric Approach," International Journal of Systems Science, vol. 32, no. 4, pp. 533-540, 2001.
[53] C.-C. Tsui, "A New Design Approach to Unknown Input Observers," IEEE Trans. Autom. Contr., vol. 41, no. 3, pp. 464-468, 1996.
[54] C. Edwards and C. P. Tan, "A Comparison of Sliding Mode and Unknown Input Observers for Fault Reconstruction," European J. Contr., vol. 12, no. 3, pp. 245-260, 2006.
[55] A. Cristofaro and T. A. Johansen, "Fault Tolerant Control Allocation Using Unknown Input Observers," Automatica, vol. 50, no. 7, pp. 1891-1897, 2014.
[56] M. Hou and P. C. Muller, "Design of Observers for Linear Systems with Unknown Inputs," IEEE Trans. Autom. Contr., vol. 37, no. 6, pp. 871-875, 1992.
[57] S. Bhattacharyya, "Observer Design for Linear Systems with Unknown Inputs," IEEE Trans. Autom. Contr., vol. 23, no. 3, pp. 483-484, 1978.
[58] M. E. Valcher, "State Observers for Discrete-Time Linear Systems with Unknown Inputs," IEEE Trans. Autom. Contr., vol. 44, no. 2, pp. 397-401, 1999.
[59] P. L. Bogler, "Tracking a Maneuvering Target Using Input Estimation," IEEE Trans. Aerospace and Electronic Systems, no. 3, pp. 298-310, 1987.
[60] Y. Bar-Shalom, X. R. Li, and T. Kirubarajan, Estimation with Applications to Tracking and Navigation: Theory, Algorithms and Software. John Wiley \& Sons, 2004.
[61] H. Khaloozadeh and A. Karsaz, "Modified Input Estimation Technique for Tracking Manoeuvring Targets," IET radar, sonar \& navigation, vol. 3, no. 1, pp. 30-41, 2009.
[62] H. Lee and M.-J. Tahk, "Generalized Input-Estimation Technique for Tracking Maneuvering Targets," IEEE Trans. Aerospace and Electronic Systems, vol. 35, no. 4, pp. 1388-1402, 1999.
[63] F. Szigeti, J. Bokor, and A. Edelmayer, "Input Reconstruction by Means of System Inversion: Application to Fault Detection and Isolation," IFAC Proc. Volumes, vol. 35, no. 1, pp. 13-18, 2002.
[64] A. Ansari and D. S. Bernstein, "Aircraft Sensor Fault Detection Using State and Input Estimation," in American Control Conference, pp. 5951-5956, IEEE, 2016.
[65] D. Zhao, H. K. Lam, Y. Li, S. X. Ding, and S. Liu, "A Novel Approach to State and Unknown Input Estimation for Takagi-Sugeno Fuzzy Models with Applications to Fault Detection," IEEE Transactions on Circuits and Systems I: Regular Papers, vol. 67, no. 6, pp. 2053-2063, 2020.
[66] H. Fang, R. A. De Callafon, and J. Cortés, "Simultaneous Input and State Estimation for Nonlinear Systems with Applications to Flow Field Estimation," Automatica, vol. 49, no. 9, pp. 2805-2812, 2013.
[67] A. Stotsky and I. Kolmanovsky, "Simple Unknown Input Estimation Techniques for Automotive Applications," in Proc. Amer. Contr. Conf., vol. 5, pp. 3312-3317, 2001.
[68] A. Stotsky and I. Kolmanovsky, "Application of Input Estimation Techniques to Charge Estimation and Control in Automotive Engines," Contr. Eng. Pract., vol. 10, no. 12, pp. 13711383, 2002.
[69] J. Chauvin, G. Corde, N. Petit, and P. Rouchon, "Periodic Input Estimation for Linear Periodic Systems: Automotive Engine Applications," Automatica, vol. 43, no. 6, pp. 971-980, 2007.
[70] A. Ansari and D. S. Bernstein, "Input Estimation for Nonminimum-Phase Systems With Application to Acceleration Estimation for a Maneuvering Vehicle," IEEE Trans. Contr. Syst. Techn., vol. 27, no. 4, pp. 1596-1607, 2019.
[71] A. M. D'Amato, A. A. Ali, A. Ridley, and D. S. Bernstein, "Retrospective Cost Optimization for Adaptive State Estimation, Input Estimation, and Model Refinement," Procedia Computer Science, vol. 18, pp. 1919-1928, 2013.
[72] A. A. Ali, A. Goel, A. J. Ridley, and D. S. Bernstein, "Retrospective-Cost-Based Adaptive Input and State Estimation for the Ionosphere-Thermosphere," Journal of Aerospace Information Systems, vol. 12, no. 12, pp. 767-783, 2015.
[73] A. Ansari and D. S. Bernstein, "Adaptive Input Estimation for Nonminimum-Phase Discrete-Time Systems," in Conference on Decision and Control, pp. 1159-1164, IEEE, 2016.
[74] L. Han, Z. Ren, and D. S. Bernstein, "Maneuvering Target Tracking Using RetrospectiveCost Input Estimation," IEEE Transactions on Aerospace and Electronic Systems, vol. 52, no. 5, pp. 2495-2503, 2016.
[75] A. Ansari and D. S. Bernstein, "Satellite Drag Estimation Using Retrospective Cost Input Estimation," in American Control Conference, pp. 5804-5809, IEEE, 2019.
[76] Y. Rahman, A. Xie, and D. S. Bernstein, "Retrospective Cost Adaptive Control: Pole Placement, Frequency Response, and Connections with LQG Control," IEEE Control Systems Magazine, vol. 37, no. 5, pp. 28-69, 2017.
[77] S. Sanjeevini and D. S. Bernstein, "Minimal-Delay FIR Delayed Left Inverses for Systems with Zero Nonzero Zeros," Systems \& Control Letters, vol. 133, p. 104552, 2019.
[78] S. Sanjeevini and D. S. Bernstein, "Finite-Delay Input Reconstruction for Left-Invertible Discrete-Time Systems with Zero Nonzero Zeros," in American Control Conference, pp. 5810-5815, IEEE, 2019.
[79] B. L. Ho and R. E. Kalman, "Effective Construction of Linear State-Variable Models from Input/Output Functions," at-Automatisierungstechnik, vol. 14, no. 1-12, pp. 545-548, 1966.
[80] A. Vardulakis, D. Limebeer, and N. Karcanias, "Structure and Smith-McMillan Form of a Rational Matrix at Infinity," International Journal of Control, vol. 35, no. 4, pp. 701-725, 1982.
[81] B. F. Wyman, M. K. Sain, G. Conte, and A.-M. Perdon, "On the Zeros and Poles of a Transfer Function," Linear Algebra and Its Applications, vol. 122, pp. 123-144, 1989.
[82] A. G. J. MacFarlane and N. Karcanias, "Poles and Zeros of Linear Multivariable Systems: A Survey of the Algebraic, Geometric and Complex-Variable Theory," International Journal of Control, vol. 24, no. 1, pp. 33-74, 1976.
[83] D. H. Owens, "Computation and Characterisation of the Zeros of Linear Multivariable Systems," Proceedings of the Institution of Electrical Engineers, vol. 126, no. 12, pp. 13351337, 1979.
[84] N. Karcanias and B. Kouvaritakis, "The Output Zeroing Problem and its Relationship to the Invariant Zero Structure: A Matrix Pencil Approach," International Journal of Control, vol. 30, no. 3, pp. 395-415, 1979.
[85] C. B. Schrader and M. K. Sain, "Research on System Zeros: A Survey," International Journal of Control, vol. 50, no. 4, pp. 1407-1433, 1989.
[86] J. Tokarzewski, Finite Zeros in Discrete Time Control Systems. Springer, 2006.
[87] T. Berger, A. Ilchmann, and F. Wirth, "Zero Dynamics and Stabilization for Analytic Linear Systems," Acta Applicandae Mathematicae, vol. 138, no. 1, pp. 17-57, 2015.
[88] S. Sanjeevini and D. S. Bernstein, "Counting Zeros Using Observability and Block Toeplitz Matrices," IEEE Transactions on Automatic Control, vol. 66, no. 3, pp. 1301-1305, 2020.
[89] S. Sanjeevini, S. A. U. Islam, and D. S. Bernstein, "On the Zero Dynamics of Linear InputOutput Models," International Journal of Control, vol. 95, no. 4, pp. 924-933, 2022.
[90] S. A. U. Islam, T. Nguyen, I. Kolmanovsky, and D. S. Bernstein, "Data-Driven Retrospective Cost Adaptive Control for Flight Control Applications," J. Guid. Contr. Dyn., 2021.
[91] A. Ansari and D. S. Bernstein, "Retrospective Cost Adaptive Control of Generic Transport Model Under Uncertainty and Failure," Journal of Aerospace Information Systems, vol. 14, no. 3, pp. 123-174, 2017.
[92] Y. Rahman, K. F. Aljanaideh, and D. S. Bernstein, "Retrospective Cost Adaptive Control Using Composite FIR/IIR Controllers," in American Control Conference, pp. 893-898, IEEE, 2018.
[93] A. Goel, K. Duraisamy, and D. S. Bernstein, "Retrospective Cost Adaptive Control of Unstart in a Model Scramjet Combustor," AIAA Journal, vol. 56, no. 3, pp. 1085-1096, 2018.
[94] E. W. Kamen, P. P. Khargonekar, and K. Poolla, "A Transfer-Function Approach to Linear Time-Varying Discrete-Time Systems," SIAM J. contr. optim., vol. 23, no. 4, pp. 550-565, 1985.
[95] B. K. Ghosh and P. R. Bouthellier, "Simultaneous Coefficient Assignment of Discrete-Time Multi-Input Multi-Output Linear Time-Varying System: A New Approach for Compensator Design," SIAM J. contr. optim., vol. 31, no. 6, pp. 1438-1461, 1993.
[96] J. A. Ball, I. Gohberg, and M. A. Kaashoek, "A Frequency Response Function for Linear, Time-Varying Systems," Math. Contr. Sig. Sys., vol. 8, no. 4, pp. 334-351, 1995.
[97] P. Dewilde and A.-J. Van der Veen, Time-Varying Systems and Computations. Springer Science \& Business Media, 1998.
[98] R. Guidorzi and R. Diversi, "Minimal Representations of MIMO Time-Varying Systems and Realization of Cyclostationary Models," Automatica, vol. 39, no. 11, pp. 1903-1914, 2003.
[99] A. Halanay and V. Ionescu, Time-Varying Discrete Linear Systems: Input-Output Operators. Riccati Equations. Disturbance Attenuation, vol. 68. Birkhäuser, 2012.
[100] S. Sanjeevini and D. S. Bernstein, "Decomposition of the Retrospective Performance Variable in Adaptive Input Estimation," in Proc. Amer. Contr. Conf., 2022. to appear.
[101] S. Diop, J. Grizzle, and F. Chaplais, "On Numerical Differentiation Algorithms for Nonlinear Estimation," in Proc. IEEE Conf. Dec. Contr., vol. 2, pp. 1133-1138, 2000.
[102] F. Jauberteau and J. Jauberteau, "Numerical Differentiation with Noisy Signal," Applied Mathematics and Computation, vol. 215, pp. 2283-2297, 2009.
[103] J. Stickel, "Data Smoothing and Numerical Differentiation by a Regularization Method," Computers \& Chemical Engineering, vol. 34, pp. 467-475, 2010.
[104] K. D. Listmann and Z. Zhao, "A Comparison of Methods for Higher-Order Numerical Differentiation," in Proc. Euro. Contr. Conf., pp. 3676-3681, 2013.
[105] M. Reichhartinger, D. Efimov, and L. Fridman, "Special Issue on Differentiators," Int. J. Contr., vol. 91, no. 9, pp. 1980-1982, 2018.
[106] J. Cullum, "Numerical Differentiation and Regularization," SIAM J. Numer. Analysis, vol. 8, pp. 254-265, 1971.
[107] A. Savitzky and M. J. Golay, "Smoothing and Differentiation of Data by Simplified Least Squares Procedures," Analytical Chemistry, vol. 36, no. 8, pp. 1627-1639, 1964.
[108] A. M. Dabroom and H. K. Khalil, "Discrete-time Implementation of High-Gain Observers for Numerical Differentiation," Int. J. Contr., vol. 72, no. 17, pp. 1523-1537, 1999.
[109] P. R. Kalata, "The Tracking Index: A Generalized Parameter for $\alpha-\beta$ and $\alpha-\beta-\gamma$ Target Trackers," IEEE Transactions on Aerospace and Electronic Systems, no. 2, pp. 174-182, 1984.
[110] A. Levant, "Higher-Order Sliding Modes, Differentiation and Output-Feedback Control," International Journal of Control, vol. 76, no. 9-10, pp. 924-941, 2003.
[111] M. Reichhartinger and S. Spurgeon, "An Arbitrary-Order Differentiator Design Paradigm with Adaptive Gains," Int. J. Contr., vol. 91, no. 9, pp. 2028-2042, 2018.
[112] F. López-Caamal and J. A. Moreno, "Generalised Multivariable Supertwisting Algorithm," Int. J. Robust Nonlinear Contr., vol. 29, no. 3, pp. 634-660, 2019.
[113] M. R. Mojallizadeh, B. Brogliato, and V. Acary, "Discrete-Time Differentiators: Design and Comparative Analysis," Int. J. Robust Nonlinear Contr., vol. 31, no. 16, pp. 7679-7723, 2021.
[114] S. Verma, S. Sanjeevini, E. D. Sumer, A. Girard, and D. S. Bernstein, "On the Accuracy of Numerical Differentiation Using High-Gain Observers and Adaptive Input Estimation," in Proc. Amer. Contr. Conf., 2022. to appear.
[115] F. M. Callier and C. A. Desoer, Linear System Theory. Springer, 2012.
[116] D. S. Bernstein, Scalar, Vector, and Matrix Mathematics: Theory, Facts, and FormulasRevised and Expanded Edition. Princeton University Press, 2018.
[117] A. Pugh, E. Jones, O. Demianczuk, and G. Hayton, "Infinite-Frequency Structure and a Certain Matrix Laurent Expansion," International Journal of Control, vol. 50, no. 5, pp. 17931805, 1989.
[118] B. D. O. Anderson, "Output-Nulling Invariant and Controllability Subspaces," IFAC Proceedings Volumes, vol. 8, no. 1, pp. 337-345, 1975.
[119] P. Antsaklis, "Maximal Order Reduction and Supremal (A,B)-Invariant and Controllability Subspaces," IEEE Transactions on Automatic Control, vol. 25, no. 1, pp. 44-49, 1980.
[120] W. J. Rugh, Linear System Theory. Prentice Hall, second ed., 1996.
[121] C. C. MacDuffee, The Theory of Matrices, vol. 5. Springer Science \& Business Media, 2012.
[122] T. Kailath, Linear Systems. Prentice-Hall, 1980.
[123] J. W. Polderman, "A State Space Approach to the Problem of Adaptive Pole Assignment," Mathematics of Control, Signals and Systems, vol. 2, no. 1, pp. 71-94, 1989.
[124] E. Polak, "An Algorithm for Reducing a Linear, Time-Invariant Differential System to State Form," IEEE Transactions on Automatic Control, vol. 11, no. 3, pp. 577-579, 1966.
[125] K. F. Aljanaideh and D. S. Bernstein, "Initial Conditions in Time-and Frequency-Domain System Identification: Implications of the Shift Operator versus the Z and Discrete Fourier Transforms," IEEE Control Systems Magazine, vol. 38, no. 2, pp. 80-93, 2018.
[126] S. A. U. Islam and D. S. Bernstein, "Recursive Least Squares for Real-Time Implementation [Lecture Notes]," IEEE Control Systems Magazine, vol. 39, no. 3, pp. 82-85, 2019.
[127] M. Majji, J.-N. Juang, and J. L. Junkins, "Time-Varying Eigensystem Realization Algorithm," J. Guid. Contr. Dyn., vol. 33, no. 1, pp. 13-28, 2010.
[128] B. Recht, M. Fazel, and P. A. Parrilo, "Guaranteed Minimum-Rank Solutions of Linear Matrix Equations via Nuclear Norm Minimization," SIAM Review, vol. 52, no. 3, pp. 471501, 2010.
[129] R. S. Smith, "Nuclear Norm Minimization Methods for Frequency Domain Subspace Identification," in Proc. Amer. Contr. Conf., pp. 2689-2694, 2012.
[130] P. Van Overschee and B. L. De Moor, Subspace Identification for Linear Systems: The-ory-Implementation-Applications. Springer Science \& Business Media, 2012.
[131] A. Emami-Naeini and P. Van Dooren, "Computation of Zeros of Linear Multivariable Systems," Automatica, vol. 18, no. 4, pp. 415-430, 1982.


[^0]:    ${ }^{1}$ The estimation of the derivative of $y_{k}$ uses the data $y_{k}$ and hence the estimation of the derivative of $y_{k}$ starts at step $k$. This implies that the estimate of derivative of $y_{k}$ is available only at step $k+1$ and thus there is a delay of one step in the estimation.

